

Essential Grammar

# Finnish

AN ESSENTIAL GRAMMAR



Fred Karlsson

Finnish

**Also available as a printed book  
see title verso for ISBN details**

# FINNISH: AN ESSENTIAL GRAMMAR

This is the ideal reference grammar for the student of Finnish. It gives a systematic account of the structures of the written language and also features the characteristics of colloquial Finnish as spoken in Helsinki and its surroundings.

*Finnish: An Essential Grammar* is grounded in fundamental insights of modern linguistics. No prior knowledge is assumed on the part of the reader and grammatical rules are clearly explained without jargon.

Features include:

- pronunciation guide
- thorough descriptions of morphology (word structure) and syntax (sentence structure)
- inflection tables
- subject index

*Finnish: An Essential Grammar* is a revised and updated edition of a volume first published in 1983, since when it has proved popular with students and professional linguists worldwide. It has been translated into several languages, including Finnish.

**Fred Karlsson** is Professor of General Linguistics at the University of Helsinki.



# FINNISH: AN ESSENTIAL GRAMMAR

Fred Karlsson



London and New York

First published 1983 as *Finnish Grammar*  
by WSOY, Helsinki

New edition published 1999  
by Routledge  
11 New Fetter Lane, London EC4P 4EE

Simultaneously published in the USA and Canada  
by Routledge  
29 West 35th Street, New York, NY 10001

*Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group*

This edition published in the Taylor & Francis e-Library, 2002.

© 1983; 1999 Fred Karlsson  
Translated by Andrew Chesterman

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilized in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.

*British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data*

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

*Library of Congress Cataloguing in Publication Data*

Karlsson, Fred,

[Finsk grammatik. English]

Finnish: an essential grammar/Fred Karlsson; [translated by Andrew Chesterman].

p. cm.—(Routledge grammars)

Revised and updated version of: Finnish grammar. Helsinki: WSOY [Werner Söderström Osakeyhtiö], 1983. Finnish grammar is a translation of Suomen peruskielioppi, 1982, a translation of: Finsk grammatik. Originally published: Helsinki: Finnish Literature Society (Suomalaisen Kirjallisuuden Seura), 1978.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

1. Finnish language—Grammar. 2. Finnish language—Textbooks for foreign speakers—English. I. Chesterman, Andrew. II. Title. III. Series.

PH135.K35 1999

494'.5415—dc21

98—55439

CIP

ISBN 0-203-01822-2 Master e-book ISBN

ISBN 0-203-18753-9 (Adobe eReader Format)

ISBN 0-415-20705-3 (pbk)

ISBN 0-415-20704-5 (hbk)

# CONTENTS

Preface	ix
List of abbreviations	x
<b>1 Introduction</b>	<b>1</b>
§1 The relation of Finnish to other languages	1
§2 Finnish past and present	2
§3 The basic characteristics of Finnish	4
§4 What are the special difficulties?	6
<b>2 Pronunciation and sound structure</b>	<b>9</b>
§5 Letters and sounds	9
§6 Vowels and consonants	10
§7 Short and long sounds	12
§8 Diphthongs	14
§9 Syllables	14
§10 Stress and intonation	15
§11 Vowel harmony	16
<b>3 A survey of word structure</b>	<b>18</b>
§12 Nominals and their endings	18
§13 Finite verb forms and their endings	21
§14 Non-finite verb forms and their endings	24
<b>4 Two important sound alternations</b>	<b>28</b>
§15 Consonant gradation ( <b>p, t, k</b> )	28
§16 Vowel changes before <b>-i-</b> endings	38
<b>5 The declension of nominals</b>	<b>44</b>
§17 General	44
§18 Nominals with a basic form in <b>-i</b>	46
§19 Nominals with a basic form in <b>-e</b>	49
§20 Nominals with a basic form ending in a consonant	50

<b>6</b>	<b>The conjugation of verbs</b>	55
§21	General	55
§22	Infinitive endings	56
§23	Inflectional stems	57
<b>7</b>	<b>Basic sentence structure</b>	61
§24	Present tense personal endings	61
§25	The nominative (basic form of nominals)	63
§26	Singular and plural	67
§27	The verb <b>olla</b> '(to) be'	68
§28	'To have' in Finnish	69
§29	Negative sentences	69
§30	Questions and answers	71
§31	Concord of attributes	74
<b>8</b>	<b>The partitive</b>	76
§32	Formation of the partitive	76
§33	Use of the partitive	82
<b>9</b>	<b>The genitive, possessive suffixes and the accusative</b>	91
§34	Formation of the genitive	91
§35	Use of the genitive	95
§36	Possessive suffixes	97
§37	What is the accusative?	100
§38	The accusative endings	102
§39	Quantity adverbs taking an object case	105
<b>10</b>	<b>The six local cases</b>	107
§40	General	107
§41	Inessive	108
§42	Elative	110
§43	Illative	112
§44	Adessive	115
§45	Ablative	117
§46	Allative	119
§47	Directional verbs	120
§48	Place names	121
<b>11</b>	<b>Other cases</b>	123
§49	Essive	123
§50	Translative	125
§51	Abessive, comitative and instructive	127

---

<b>12 Numerals</b>	129
§52 Cardinal numbers	129
§53 Ordinal numbers	134
<b>13 Pronouns</b>	136
§54 Personal pronouns	136
§55 Demonstrative pronouns	138
§56 Interrogative pronouns	140
§57 Indefinite pronouns	142
§58 Relative pronouns	149
<b>14 Tenses</b>	152
§59 Present tense	152
§60 Past tense	152
§61 Perfect tense	156
§62 Pluperfect tense	158
§63 Negative forms	159
<b>15 Moods</b>	162
§64 Indicative	162
§65 Conditional	162
§66 Imperative	165
§67 Potential	169
<b>16 The passive</b>	172
§68 General	172
§69 Passive present	173
§70 Passive past	175
§71 Passive perfect and pluperfect	177
§72 Passive moods	180
<b>17 Infinitives</b>	182
§73 General	182
§74 First infinitive	183
§75 Second infinitive	184
§76 Third infinitive	188
§77 Fourth infinitive	192
<b>18 Participles</b>	194
§78 General	194
§79 Present participle active	195



§80	Present participle passive	196
§81	The past participles	198
§82	The participial construction	200
§83	The temporal construction	205
§84	The agent construction	207
<b>19</b>	<b>Comparison of adjectives</b>	<b>211</b>
§85	Comparative	211
§86	Superlative	214
<b>20</b>	<b>Other word classes</b>	<b>218</b>
§87	Adverbs	218
§88	Prepositions	221
§89	Postpositions	222
§90	Conjunctions	226
§91	Particles	228
<b>21</b>	<b>Word formation</b>	<b>231</b>
§92	General	231
§93	Derivation	232
§94	Compounding	241
<b>22</b>	<b>The colloquial spoken language</b>	<b>244</b>
§95	General	244
§96	Omission and assimilation of sounds	245
§97	Differences of form	246
	Appendix: Inflection tables	249
	Subject index	267

# PREFACE

*Finnish: An Essential Grammar* is a slightly modified version of the book *Finnish Grammar* published by WSOY in Helsinki in 1983. The second edition went out of print in 1995. *Finnish Grammar* was a translation of the Finnish book *Suomen peruskielioppi* published in 1982. The original Swedish edition *Finsk grammatik* appeared in 1978. These versions were published by the Finnish Literature Society (Suomalaisen Kirjallisuuden Seura), Helsinki.

*Finnish: An Essential Grammar* is primarily intended for those wanting to learn the basics of the language. The book covers the grammatical core; rare forms and constructions have not been included. I have tried to formulate the grammatical rules as precisely as possible using reasonable terminology. At the same time, all essentials should be easy to find in the numerous examples.

The book relies on some basic insights of modern linguistics and might therefore serve as an introduction to the structure of Finnish for professional linguists as well. Chapters 3 and 7 contain surveys of the word and clause structure, respectively, and for those readers unfamiliar with the basics it is recommended that these are read first.

In this edition, compared to the previous versions, I have changed the typography of the grammatical rules, written more on Finnish pronunciation, and updated many examples.

The Internet page <http://www.helsinki.fi/~jones/finn-books.html> provides a list of books available for studying practical Finnish. The home page of the Research Center for the Languages of Finland, <http://www.domlang.fi/>, provides a wealth of information concerning the Finnish language. The Internet page <http://www.ling.helsinki.fi/~fkarlsson/genkau2.html> is a full list of the 2,000 distinct forms that a Finnish noun can take.

My sincere thanks are due to Professor Andrew Chesterman, who skilfully and critically made the translation, to the anonymous referee of Routledge who suggested several improvements, and to the Finnish Ministry of Education for financially supporting the original translation in 1982. Last but not least: thank you, Sylvi, as well as Max, Linn and Maj for continuous support!

Fred Karlsson  
Helsinki. November 1998

# ABBREVIATIONS

-V-	a vowel which is the same as the nearest preceding vowel
+	resulting weak grade in consonant gradation
=	internal word boundary
~	sound alternation
:	relation between different stems of a word, e.g. <b>käsi</b> ‘hand’ : <b>käde/ssä</b> ‘in the hand’
/	boundary between stem and ending, or between endings, e.g. <b>käde/ssä/ni</b> ‘in my hand’
§	section
ablat.	ablative
adess.	adessive
allat.	allative
cf.	compare
cond.	conditional
elat.	elative
emph.	emphatic
ess.	essive
gen.	genitive
illat.	illative
imp.	imperative
indic.	indicative
iness.	inessive
inf.	infinitive
intrans.	intransitive
lit.	literally
masc.	masculine
nom.	nominative
p.	person
part.	partitive
pass.	passive
pl.	plural
pot.	potential
pres.	present
sing.	singular
sth.	something
trans.	transitive
transl.	translative

# 1 INTRODUCTION

- *The relation of Finnish to other languages*
- *Finnish past and present*
- *The basic characteristics of Finnish*
- *What are the special difficulties?*

## §1 THE RELATION OF FINNISH TO OTHER LANGUAGES

The Finnish language is a member of the Finno-Ugric language family. This is quite different from the Indo-European family, to which languages such as Swedish, English, French, German, Russian, Persian and Hindi belong. Only four of the major Finno-Ugric languages are spoken outside Russia: Finnish, Estonian, Hungarian and the Sámi ('Lappish') languages in the north of Finland, Norway, Sweden and the far north-west of Russia. The term 'Lappish' is derogatory.

The languages most closely related to Finnish are Estonian, Karelian, Vepsian, Ludian, Votian and Livonian, which are all spoken around the south and east of the Gulf of Finland. Of these Finnic languages Finnish and Estonian are spoken most widely. These two are so similar in grammar and vocabulary, so closely related, that after a little practice Finns and Estonians can understand each other's languages fairly well. If we group together the other Finno-Ugric languages according to their relations to each other and to Finnish, we have the following traditional picture:

### *The Finno-Ugric languages*

Finnish	Estonian	Sámi (Lapp)	Mordvin	Komi (Zyryan)	Hanti (Ostyak)
Karelian			Mari (Cheremis)		Udmurt (Votyak)
Mansi (Vogul)					
Vepsian					Hungarian
Ludian					
Votian					
Livonian					
→	→	→	→	→	→

→ → → → → increasing distance from Finnish → → → → →

Finnish and Hungarian are thus quite distant from each other, and the relation between these two languages can really only be established on historical linguistic grounds. Roughly speaking, Finnish is as far from Hungarian as English or German is from Persian.

Samoyed languages are spoken by a few small groups of people in the north of Russia, especially in western Siberia. The Finno-Ugric languages and the Samoyed languages constitute the Uralic language family. The number of speakers of Uralic languages varies considerably. Six Uralic languages have more than 500,000 speakers: Hungarian (14 million), Finnish (5 million), Estonian (1 million), Mordvin (Erzya and Moksha, 750,000), Mari (550,000), and Udmurt (500,000). Several Uralic languages have very few speakers and their future is gravely endangered. This is true of all four remaining Samoyed languages, and of Hanti (13,000), Mansi (3,000), the ten Sámi languages (30,000), Livonian (30), Votian (50), Ludian (5,000), and Vepsian (6,000).<sup>1</sup>

### §2 FINNISH PAST AND PRESENT

The size of the population of Finland on 31 December 1997 was 5,147,349 persons. The distribution of language speakers, according to first (native) language, is given in the table below (source: Statistics Finland, Internet address <http://www.stat.fi/tk/tilsivu.html>).

*Population of Finland by first language*

	1900	1950	1980	1995	1996	1997	1997
<i>Language</i>	%	%	%	%	%	%	<i>Number</i>
Finnish	86.75	91.10	93.50	92.92	92.86	92.74	4,773,576
Swedish	12.89	8.64	6.28	5.76	5.73	5.71	293,691
Sámi	0.06	0.06	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.03	1,716
Russian	0.29	0.12	0.03	0.31	0.35	0.40	20,398
Other	0.01	0.08	0.16	0.98	1.03	1.13	57,968
<i>Sum</i>							5,147,349

Finnish is the native language of 92.7 per cent of Finland's population of 5.15 million people. The population also includes a minority group of about 294,000 Swedish-speaking Finns, the Finland Swedes, who are guaranteed the same basic rights as the Finnish-speaking majority by the country's constitution, about 2,000 Sámi-speaking people, 6,000 gypsies (the number of Romany speakers is not known), about 5,000 deaf people, whose first language is Finnish sign language, and about a thousand Tatars. Since the collapse of the Soviet Union, more than 10,000 people belonging mostly to Finno-Ugric minorities in the west of Russia (especially Ingrians)

<sup>1</sup> Up-to-date information in English on the Uralic languages is provided on the Internet pages <http://www.helsinki.fi/hum/sugl/fgrlang.html> and <http://www.helsinki.fi/~tasalmin/fu.html>.

have emigrated to Finland. The overall proportion of foreigners resident in Finland is much smaller than in continental European countries.

Finland is officially a bilingual country, whose national languages are Finnish and Swedish. Waves of emigration have resulted in large Finnish-speaking minorities particularly in North America (both the USA and Canada) and in Sweden. In Sweden today there are approximately 300,000 Finns, i.e. about the same number as there are Swedish-speaking Finns in Finland.

The earliest archaeological remains unearthed in Finland are from 7,500 BC, but it has not been possible to determine the cultural and language background of the first inhabitants. There were Finno-Ugric settlements in Finland as long ago as 4,000 BC. This population incorporated Baltic elements around 2,000 BC and Germanic elements as early as c. 1,500 BC. The original population thus formed then absorbed the Baltic Finns from across the Gulf of Finland about 2,000 years ago. Politically, Finland was a part of Sweden until 1809, and an autonomous Grand Duchy within Tsarist Russia from 1809 to 1917. Finland has been an independent republic since 1917.

During the Swedish period Finnish was very much a secondary language in official contexts. Its basic public use was in church services and to some extent in law enforcement. The language of the administration and the intelligentsia was Swedish. It was not until 1863 that Finnish was decreed to have equal status with Swedish 'in all matters directly concerning the Finnish-speaking population of the country', to be implemented within a 20-year period of transition.

The earliest actual texts in Finnish date from the 1540s. The father of written Finnish is considered to be Mikael Agricola (1510?–1557), the Bishop of Turku (Åbo), who started the Finnish translation of parts of the Bible during the Reformation. Some 5,350 of the words used by Agricola are still used in contemporary Finnish.

Finnish was greatly influenced by Swedish for a long time, especially as regards its vocabulary, which was quite natural considering that the authorities were generally Swedish-speaking. Since Turku (Åbo) was the capital city until 1827, it is understandable that standard Finnish developed primarily out of south-western dialects. In the nineteenth century there was increasing influence from eastern Finland, mostly owing to the national epic *Kalevala*, the first part of which was published in 1835. The *Kalevala* is based on the folk poetry of eastern Finland and Karelia, as collected and compiled by Elias Lönnrot and others. The *Kalevala* was an important source of inspiration for the nineteenth century nationalist movement, whose central figure was Johan Vilhelm Snellman.

The nationalist movement also had a variety of linguistic effects. Many language scholars wanted to 'finnicize' Finnish by getting rid of Swedish loan words and a number of grammatical structures borrowed directly from Swedish.

## 4 Finnish: An Essential Grammar

---

Language is not a uniform system: it varies in different ways, for example in regional dialects. The main dialect areas of Finnish are shown on the following map.

### FINLAND'S DIALECT AREAS

- regional dialects
1. South-western dialects
  2. South-western transition dialects
  3. Häme dialects
  4. Southern Ostrobothnian dialects
  5. Central and northern Ostrobothnian dialects
  6. Northern dialects
  7. Savo dialects
  8. South-eastern dialects
- Swedish-speaking areas



In the latter half of the twentieth century this traditional picture of dialect areas has been radically levelled by urbanization, mass education, improved means of communication and transport, and other societal processes. However, this book does not deal with regional dialects and their differences. Instead, we shall be concerned with the official norm of the language, Standard Finnish, one important variant of which is normal written prose. But even the standard language is not completely uniform. Its grammatical structures and also (in spoken Standard Finnish) its pronunciation both vary slightly depending on the speech situation and a number of other factors. The standard language spoken in official or formal situations is grammatically close to the written norm; but colloquial spoken Finnish differs in many ways from more formal usage in both pronunciation and grammar. The differences between everyday and more formal Finnish are discussed in more detail in Chapter 22.

### §3 THE BASIC CHARACTERISTICS OF FINNISH

The basic principle of word formation in Finnish is the addition of endings (bound morphemes, suffixes) to stems. For example, by attaching the endings **-i** 'plural', **-ssa** 'in', **-si** 'your', and **-kin** 'too, also' to the stem **auto** 'car' in different ways, the following words can be formed.

<b>auto/ssa</b>	in the car	(car/in)
<b>auto/i/ssa</b>	in the cars	(car/s/in)
<b>auto/ssa/si</b>	in your car	(car/in/your)
<b>auto/si</b>	your car	(car/your)
<b>auto/kin</b>	the car too	(car/too)
<b>auto/si/kin</b>	your car too	(car/your/too)
<b>auto/ssa/kin</b>	in the car too	(car/in/too)
<b>auto/i/ssa/kin</b>	in the cars too	(car/s/in/too)
<b>auto/i/ssa/si/kin</b>	in your cars too	(car/s/in/your/too)

Finnish verb forms are built up in the same way. Using the verb stem **sano-** ‘say’, and the endings **-n** ‘I’, **-i** ‘past tense’, and **-han** ‘emphasis’, we can form these examples:

<b>sano/n</b>	I say	(say/I)
<b>sano/n/han</b>	I do say	(say/I/emphasis)
<b>sano/i/n</b>	I said	(say/past/I)
<b>sano/i/n/han</b>	I did say	(say/past/I/emphasis)

The adding of endings to a stem is a morphological feature of many European languages, but Finnish is nevertheless different from most others in two respects.

In the first place Finnish has more case endings than is usual in European languages. Finnish case endings normally correspond to prepositions or postpositions in other languages: cf. Finnish **auto/ssa**, **auto/sta**, **auto/on**, **auto/lla** and English ‘*in* the car’, ‘*out of* the car’, ‘*into* the car’, ‘*by* car’. Finnish has about 15 cases; English nouns have only one ‘morphologically marked’ case.

The second difference is that Finnish sometimes uses endings where Indo-European languages generally have independent words. This is also true of the Finnish possessive suffixes, which correspond to possessive pronouns, e.g. **-ni** ‘my’, **-si** ‘your’, **-mme** ‘our’, cf. **kirja/ni** ‘my book’, **kirja/mme** ‘our book’.

Another set of endings particular to Finnish is that of the enclitic particles, which always occur in the final position after all other endings. It is not easy to say exactly what these particles mean; their function is often emphasis of some kind, similar to that of intonation in some other languages. The particles include **-kin** ‘too, also’, **-han** ‘emphasis’ (often in the sense ‘you know, don’t you?’), and **-ko** ‘interrogative’, cf. **kirja/ssa/kin** ‘in the book too’, and **On/ko tuo kirja?** ‘Is that a book?’.

Another characteristic feature of Finnish is the wide-ranging use made of endings in the formation of new independent words. Compare the basic word **kirja** ‘book’ with the derived forms **kirje** ‘letter’, **kirja/sto** ‘library’, **kirja/llinen** ‘literary’, **kirja/llis/uus** ‘literature’, **kirjo/itta(a)** ‘(to) write’, and **kirjo/itta/ja** ‘writer’. Derivational morphemes (derived words) can also be



followed by other endings, for nouns such as case endings, possessive suffixes and particles. We can then form such words as:

<b>kirja/sto/ssa</b>	in the library
<b>kirjo/ita/n/ko</b>	shall I write?
<b>kirjo/itta/ja/n/kin</b>	of the writer, too
<b>kirja/sto/sta/mme</b>	out of out library

Learning the endings is not as difficult as is often thought. Since the endings are often piled up one behind the other rather mechanically, Finnish word forms are usually easy to analyse if one knows the endings.

Finnish nouns differ from those of many Indo-European languages in that there is no grammatical gender. In German there is the ‘der—die—das’ difference, French has ‘le—la’, Swedish ‘en—ett’, and so on, but these distinctions do not occur in Finnish.

Finnish does not have articles, either (cf. ‘a car—the car’). The semantic function of articles is often expressed by word order in Finnish:

<b>Kadulla on auto.</b>	There is a car in the street.
<b>Auto on kadulla.</b>	The car is in the street.

When adjectives occur as attributes they agree in number and case with the headword, i.e. they take the same endings.

<b>iso auto</b>	the big car
<b>iso/ssa auto/ssa</b>	in the big car
<b>iso/n auto/n</b>	of the big car
<b>iso/t auto/t</b>	the big cars
<b>iso/i/ssa auto/i/ssa</b>	in the big cars

There are 21 phonemes (basic sounds) in Finnish: eight vowels and 13 consonants. The number is noticeably smaller than in most European languages. The main stress always falls on the first syllable of a word. The writing system is regular in that a given phoneme is always written with the same letter. The converse is also true: a given letter always corresponds to the same phoneme.

#### §4 WHAT ARE THE SPECIAL DIFFICULTIES?

It is worth mentioning the areas of Finnish grammar which can cause most learning difficulty. Since Finnish is not an Indo-European language the basic vocabulary differs from Indo-European. The 15 most frequent words in Finnish are the following:

1 <b>olla</b>	(to) be	4 <b>ei</b>	no
2 <b>ja</b>	and	5 <b>joka</b>	which
3 <b>se</b>	it	6 <b>hän</b>	he, she

7 <b>että</b>	that	12 <b>niin</b>	so
8 <b>tämä</b>	this	13 <b>kuin</b>	than
9 <b>mutta</b>	but	14 <b>tulla</b>	(to) come
10 <b>saada</b>	(to) get	15 <b>minä</b>	I
11 <b>kun</b>	when		

It is immediately clear that learning Finnish words requires an effort. The burden is lightened, however, by the fact that Finnish has hundreds of direct loan words (mostly from Swedish) and a great many translation loans, expressions that have been translated into Finnish equivalents.

Examples of direct loans are the following (both Swedish and English equivalents are given):

<b>ankka</b>	anka, duck	<b>kahvi</b>	kaffe, coffee	<b>kakku</b>	kaka, cake
<b>kallo</b>	skalle, skull	<b>keppi</b>	käpp, cane	<b>kirkko</b>	kyrka, church
<b>kruunu</b>	krona, crown	<b>pankki</b>	bank	<b>penkki</b>	bänk, bench
<b>posti</b>	post, mail	<b>sokki</b>	chock	<b>rokki</b>	rock, rock and roll
<b>sohva</b>	soffa, sofa	<b>tulli</b>	tull, customs	<b>viini</b>	vin, wine

Compound words which are translated loans include: **kirja/kauppa** ‘*bokhandel*, bookshop’; **olut/pullo** ‘*öflaska*, bottle of beer’; **rauta/tie/asema** ‘*järnvägsstation*, railway station’.

In §3 it was said that the inflection of Finnish words is easy in that the endings are often attached ‘mechanically’ to the stem. However, this is not always true. The form of the basic stem (root, lexical form) often alters when certain endings are added to it, i.e. a lexical word may be represented by different stems depending upon which endings it is followed by. Compare for example the inflection of the noun **käsi** ‘hand’ in different cases.

<b>käsi</b>	hand	(hand)
<b>käde/ssä</b>	in the hand	(hand/in)
<b>käte/en</b>	into the hand	(hand/into)
<b>kät/tä</b>	hand	(hand/partitive case)
<b>käs/i/ssä</b>	in the hands	(hand/s/in)
<b>käsi/kin</b>	the hand, too	(hand/too)
<b>käte/ni</b>	my hand	(hand/my)

The basic form **käsi** takes different forms according to the following ending and its sound structure. These sound alternations are governed by rules that can sometimes be extremely complex. Here are a few more example pairs:

<b>tunte/a</b>	(to) know	~	<b>tunne/n</b>	I know
<b>hyppää/n</b>	I jump	~	<b>hypä/tä</b>	(to) jump
<b>matto</b>	mat	~	<b>mato/lla</b>	on the mat

<b>maa</b>	country	~	<b>ma/i/ssa</b>	in countries
<b>tie</b>	road	~	<b>te/i/llä</b>	on the roads
<b>tietä/ä</b>	(to) know	~	<b>ties/i</b>	(he) knew

Case endings are usually added to nouns, adjectives and other nominals, but they may also be added to verbs. 3

<b>Minä lähdän Jyväskylä/än.</b>	I'm going to Jyväskylä.
<b>Minä lähdän kävele/mä/än.</b>	I'm going 'walking' (= for a walk).

The verb form **kävelemään** literally means 'into walking', just as **Jyväskylään** means 'into (the town of) Jyväskylä'. Both forms contain the case ending **-än** meaning 'into'.

The object in Finnish is marked by a case ending. In the two following sentences the ending **-n** indicates 'this word is the object of the sentence'. The rules governing the use of this ending and the other possible object endings are fairly complex.

<b>Minä ostan kirja/n.</b>	I (shall) buy the book.
<b>Kalle näki auto/n.</b>	Kalle saw the car.

The most difficult feature of the pronunciation of Finnish is the length (duration) of the sounds: differences of length serve very frequently to distinguish separate words. Compare pairs such as:

<b>kansa</b>	people	–	<b>kanssa</b>	with
<b>tuli</b>	fire	–	<b>tulli</b>	customs
<b>muta</b>	mud	–	<b>mutta</b>	but
<b>muta</b>	mud	–	<b>muuta</b>	other
<b>muta</b>	mud	–	<b>mutaa</b>	mud (partitive case)
<b>tuulee</b>	it is windy	–	<b>tuullee</b>	it is probably windy

## 2 PRONUNCIATION AND SOUND STRUCTURE

- *Letters and sounds*
- *Vowels and consonants*
- *Short and long sounds*
- *Diphthongs*
- *Syllables*
- *Stress and intonation*
- *Vowel harmony*

### §5 LETTERS AND SOUNDS

Disregarding words of foreign origin, Finnish has eight letters for vowels and 13 for consonants: **i e ä y ö u o a** and **p t k d g s h v j l r m n**. With few exceptions the following important correspondence holds between letters and phonemes in carefully pronounced Standard Finnish (phonemes are sounds thought of as types, irrespective of slight variations in the speech of the same person or between different people).

Each letter corresponds to one and the same phoneme, and each phoneme corresponds to one and the same letter.

Note the following pronunciation details:

- The vowel corresponding to the letter **ä** is an open unrounded front vowel (cf. the short vowels in British English ‘shall, rat’, and the long vowel in Swedish *bär* ‘berry’).
- The vowel corresponding to the letter **y** is a close rounded front vowel (cf. German *Führer*).
- The vowel corresponding to the letter **ö** is a half-close rounded front vowel (cf. German *Göring*).
- The combination of letters **ng** is pronounced as a long [??] sound as in **rengas** ‘ring’ [re??as].
- The letter **n** before a **k** is pronounced as a fairly long [?] sound as in **Helsinki** [helsi?ki] (cf. English ‘drink’).

- When length is used to differentiate meanings, short phonemes are written with one letter and long phonemes with two, as in **tuli** ‘fire’—**tuuli** ‘wind’—**tulli** ‘customs’; **kansa** ‘people’—**kanssa** ‘with’; **muta** ‘mud’ (nominative case)—**mutaa** ‘mud’ (partitive case).
- Words of foreign origin may contain other letters than those mentioned above, for example **b c f w x z**. Names of Swedish origin may contain the letter **å** (Å) as in **Åbo, Åke, Svartå**.
- The alphabetical order of letters is **a b c d e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s t u v w x y z å ä ö**.
- The pronunciation of the everyday spoken language differs in several respects from that of the standard spoken norm (see Chapter 22). The strict correspondence between letters and phonemes does not hold in everyday spoken language.

## §6 VOWELS AND CONSONANTS

Finnish (apart from words of foreign origin) has eight vowel and 13 consonant phonemes: **i e ä y ö u o a** and **p t k d s h v j l r m n ?**. All vowels and almost all consonants can occur as either short or long sounds. The phonetic definitions of the Finnish vowels and consonants are as follows (with examples of near-equivalent British English sounds):

<b>i</b>	close front unrounded	<i>sleep</i>
<b>e</b>	half-close front unrounded	<i>bed</i>
<b>ä</b>	open front unrounded	<i>bank</i>
<b>y</b>	close front rounded	
<b>ö</b>	half-close front rounded	
<b>u</b>	close back rounded	<i>book</i>
<b>o</b>	half-close back rounded	<i>dock</i>
<b>a</b>	open back unrounded	<i>but</i>
<b>p</b>	unvoiced unaspirated bilabial stop	<i>drop</i>
<b>t</b>	unvoiced unaspirated alveolar stop	<i>bit</i>
<b>k</b>	unvoiced unaspirated velar stop	<i>rock</i>
<b>d</b>	voiced lax alveolar stop	<i>down</i>
<b>s</b>	unvoiced alveolar sibilant	<i>sound</i>
<b>h</b>	glottal fricative or glide	<i>honey</i>
<b>v</b>	voiced labiodental fricative or glide	<i>voice</i>
<b>j</b>	voiced palatal glide	<i>young</i>
<b>l</b>	voiced alveolar lateral	<i>London</i>
<b>r</b>	voiced alveolar trill	<i>round</i>
<b>m</b>	voiced bilabial nasal	<i>music</i>
<b>n</b>	voiced alveolar nasal	<i>noise</i>
<b>ŋ</b>	voiced velar nasal	<i>ring</i>

Special attention should be paid to the following details.

- There is no difference in quality between the corresponding long and short vowels **ii—i**, **ee—e**, **ää—ä**, **yy—y**, **öö—ö**, **uu—u**, **oo—o**, **aa—a**.
- All long vowels are pronounced as pure long vowels, not as if they were diphthongs or as if they ended in **-j** or **-w**.
- The vowel **y** [y] is articulated with strongly protruded lips and a small opening between them.
- The quality of the long vowel **öö** is [ø:] and that of the short **ö** is [ø], cf. **sinäkö** ‘you?’, **pöllö** ‘owl’, **mörkö** ‘goblin’, **Närpiöön** ‘to Närpiö’. The lips are protruded and half-closed.
- The vowels **ee** and **e**, and also **ää** and **ä**, are differentiated in all positions in a word, including before **r** and in unstressed syllables. Cf. **te** ‘you’—**tee** ‘tea’, **meille** ‘to us’—**meillä** ‘“at” us’ (= at our house), **teellä** ‘with tea’—**täällä** ‘here’, **piste** ‘point’—**pistä** ‘sting!’, **vene** ‘of the boat’—**nenään** ‘into the nose’, **lehti** ‘leaf’—**lähti** ‘(he) left’, **veri** ‘blood’—**väri** ‘colour’, **perkele** ‘devil’, **merkki** ‘mark’, **Eero** (masculine name), **väärä** ‘wrong’.
- The consonants **p t k** are pronounced without aspiration, i.e. without a breathy ‘h’ sound after them.
- The consonant **s** is often pronounced as a rather dark, thick sound that can be close to **š**, especially in the environment of **u**. Cf. **pussi** ‘bag’, **luussa** ‘in the bone’, **sumu** ‘fog’, **myös** ‘also’.
- The consonant **h** may occur between vowels and is then pronounced weakly. It can also co-occur with consonants, and is then a stronger sound, particularly if the following consonant is **t** or **k**. Cf. **huono** ‘bad’, **miehen** ‘of the man’, **paha** ‘evil’, **ihminen** ‘person’, **varhain** ‘early’, **vanha** ‘old’, **vihko** ‘notebook’, **vihta** ‘bunch of birch twigs’, **sähkö** ‘electricity’, **tuhka** ‘ash’.
- The consonant **l** is pronounced as a rather thick sound when it occurs between the vowels **u** and **o**. Cf. **pullo** ‘bottle’, **hullu** ‘mad’, **kulta** ‘gold’, **pala** ‘bit’, **villi** ‘wild’.
- The consonant **r** is always trilled with the tip of the tongue, e.g. **pyörä** ‘wheel’, **Pori** (town), **Turku** (town), **virrassa** ‘in the stream’, **kierrän** ‘I turn’.
- *After* certain grammatical forms the initial consonant of the following word or particle *lengthens*. These forms are mainly nominals ending in **-e** like **perhe** ‘family’ (§19), the present indicative negative e.g. **en tule** ‘I am not coming’ (§29), the second person singular imperative e.g. **tule!** ‘come!’ (§66), and the first infinitive e.g. **tulla** ‘(to) come’ (§74).

Examples:

<i>Imperative second p. sing.</i>	<b>mene pois</b> <b>ole hiljaa</b> <b>tule tänne</b>	<b>[meneppois]</b> go away <b>[olehhiljaa]</b> be quiet <b>[tulettänne]</b> come here
<i>Nominative in -e</i>	<b>vene tuli</b> <b>venekin</b> <b>liikemies</b>	<b>[venettuli]</b> the boat came <b>[venekkin]</b> the boat, too <b>[liikemies]</b> businessman
<i>Pres. indic. negative</i>	<b>en tule Turkuun</b> <b>emme tulekaan</b> <b>en ole sairas</b>	<b>[entuletturkuun]</b> I'm not coming to Turku <b>[emmetulekkaan]</b> We're not coming after all <b>[enolessairas]</b> I am not ill
<i>First infinitive</i>	<b>haluan olla täällä</b> <b>haluan lähteä pois</b>	<b>[haluanollattäällä]</b> I want to be here <b>[haluanlähteäppois]</b> I want to go away

## §7 SHORT AND LONG SOUNDS

The difference between short and long sounds is used very widely in Finnish to distinguish different words. Long sounds can occur in almost any position in a word, and there are few restrictions on permissible combinations of long and short sounds. This is clear from the following examples.

<b><i>Tule tänne.</i></b>	<i>Come here.</i>
<b><i>Ulkona ei tuule.</i></b>	<i>Outside it is not windy.</i>
<b><i>Ulkona ei tuulle.</i></b>	<i>Outside it is probably not windy.</i>
<b><i>Ulkona tuulee.</i></b>	<i>Outside it is windy.</i>
<b><i>Pekka tulee.</i></b>	<i>Pekka comes.</i>
<b><i>Pekka tullee.</i></b>	<i>Pekka will probably come.</i>
<b><i>Ulkona tuullee.</i></b>	<i>Outside it is probably windy.</i>

Almost all the possible combinations of short and long sounds occur: short-short-short, short-long-short, long-short-long, long-long-short, short-long-long, long-long-long, etc. Note in particular the following three points:

There is a difference between a short and a long vowel before a short and a long consonant.

Examples:

<b>tili</b>	account	– <b>tiili</b>	brick	– <b>tilli</b>	dill
<b>tuli</b>	fire	– <b>tuuli</b>	wind	– <b>tulli</b>	customs
<b>mutta</b>	but	– <b>muuttaa</b>	change	– <b>muuta</b>	other ( <i>partitive case</i> )
<b>muna</b>	egg	– <b>muuna</b>	other ( <i>essive case</i> )	– <b>muunna</b>	transform!

The following six words are all pronounced differently and have distinct meanings:

<b>takka</b>	fireplace
<b>taakka</b>	burden
<b>takkaa</b>	fireplace ( <i>partitive case</i> )
<b>taakkaa</b>	burden ( <i>partitive case</i> )
<b>taka</b>	back
<b>takaa</b>	from behind

There is a distinction between a short and a long **p, t, k** or **s** when they occur after **l, r, m, n** or **?**. Before a short **p, t, k** or **s** the consonants **l, r, m, n** and **?** are fairly long.

Examples:

<b>karta</b>	avoid!	– <b>kartta</b>	map
<b>korpi</b>	wilderness	– <b>korppi</b>	raven
<b>arki</b>	weekday	– <b>arkki</b>	ark
<b>kansa</b>	people	– <b>kanssa</b>	together with
<b>pelko</b>	fear	– <b>palkki</b>	beam
<b>lampi</b>	pond	– <b>lamppu</b>	lamp
<b>valta</b>	power	– <b>valtti</b>	trump
<b>sanka</b>	spectacle frame	– <b>sankka</b>	dense

Thus, **kanssa** ‘together with’ is pronounced [kans?a] while **kansa** ‘people’ is pronounced either [kan?sa] or [kanssa].

The main stress is always on the first syllable of the word (§10). Long vowels elsewhere than in the first syllable are pronounced without main stress, cf. **táloon** ‘into the house’, **hýppään** ‘I jump’, **káappiin** ‘into the cupboard’, **rávintolaan** ‘into the restaurant’, **tálossaan** ‘in his house’.



## §8 DIPHTHONGS

Finnish has 16 common diphthongs, i.e. combinations of two vowels occurring in the same syllable. Diphthongs can be divided into four groups according to the final vowel.

- |     |           |        |         |                |              |                |                  |
|-----|-----------|--------|---------|----------------|--------------|----------------|------------------|
| (1) | <b>ei</b> | ei     | no      | <b>leipä</b>   | bread        | <b>Veikko</b>  | (masculine name) |
|     | <b>äi</b> | äiti   | mother  | <b>päivä</b>   | day          | <b>väittää</b> | (to) claim       |
|     | <b>ui</b> | uin    | I swim  | <b>puissa</b>  | in the trees | <b>kuin</b>    | than             |
|     | <b>ai</b> | kaikki | all     | <b>aika</b>    | time         | <b>vaikka</b>  | although         |
|     | <b>oi</b> | poika  | boy     | <b>voin</b>    | I can        | <b>toinen</b>  | other            |
|     | <b>öi</b> | söin   | I ate   | <b>töissä</b>  | in the works |                |                  |
|     | <b>yi</b> | hyi    | ugh!    | <b>lyijy</b>   | lead         |                |                  |
| (2) | <b>au</b> | taulu  | picture | <b>kaula</b>   | neck         | <b>sauna</b>   | sauna            |
|     | <b>ou</b> | koulu  | school  | <b>noudan</b>  | I fetch      | <b>krouvi</b>  | tavern           |
|     | <b>eu</b> | reuna  | edge    | <b>Keuruu</b>  | (place name) | <b>seutu</b>   | region           |
|     | <b>iu</b> | viulu  | violin  | <b>kiusaan</b> | I tease      | <b>hius</b>    | hair             |
| (3) | <b>äy</b> | täynnä | full    | <b>käyn</b>    | I go         | <b>näytän</b>  | I show           |
|     | <b>öy</b> | köyhä  | poor    | <b>löydän</b>  | I find       | <b>löyly</b>   | steam            |
| (4) | <b>ie</b> | tie    | road    | <b>vien</b>    | I take       | <b>mies</b>    | man              |
|     | <b>yö</b> | yö     | night   | <b>työ</b>     | work         | <b>syön</b>    | I eat            |
|     | <b>uo</b> | tuot   | that    | <b>Puola</b>   | Poland       | <b>juon</b>    | I drink          |

Note particularly the differences between the pairs **ei—äi**, **öi—öy**, **äy—öy**, **ei—eu** and **äy—eu**. Finnish also has other kinds of vowel combinations, but these others do not form diphthongs. Between the vowels there is almost always a syllable boundary. Examples:

<b>sanoa</b>	(to) say	<b>rupean</b>	I begin
<b>ainoa</b>	only	<b>tapahtua</b>	(to) happen
<b>vaikea</b>	difficult	<b>kireä</b>	tense
<b>sallia</b>	(to) allow	<b>etsiä</b>	(to) look for

## §9 SYLLABLES

Syllabification in Finnish is in most cases determined by the following basic rule.

There is a syllable boundary before every sequence of a single consonant followed by a vowel.

In the following examples the syllable boundary is indicated by a dash (-):

<b>ka-la</b>	fish	<b>jo-kai-nen</b>	every
<b>kui-ten-kin</b>	however	<b>sit-ten</b>	then
<b>päi-vä</b>	day	<b>al-kaa</b>	(to) begin
<b>pur-kis-sa</b>	in the jar	<b>purk-kiin</b>	into the jar
<b>An-tin</b>	of Antti	<b>An-til-le</b>	to Antti
<b>Hel-sin-kiin</b>	to Helsinki	<b>Hel-sin-gis-sä-kin</b>	in Helsinki, too

There is also a syllable boundary between vowels that do not form a diphthong (§8) in words such as:

<b>no-pe-a</b>	fast
<b>ai-no-a</b>	only
<b>hert-tu-an</b>	of the duke
<b>sal-li-a</b>	(to) allow

## §10 STRESS AND INTONATION

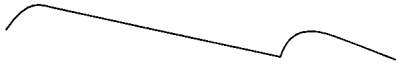

Finnish word stress follows this important rule:

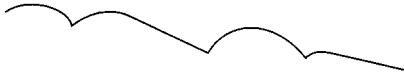
The main stress is always on the first syllable of the word.

Vowels elsewhere than in the first syllable therefore do not receive main stress. The main stress also falls on the first syllable in loan words which may have been stressed differently in the original language. Examples:

<b>Hélsinkiin</b>	to Helsinki	<b>vápaa</b>	free	<b>vóida</b>	(to) be able
<b>jókainen</b>	every	<b>máalaan</b>	I paint	<b>áatteellisuus</b>	idealism
<b>élefantti</b>	elephant	<b>límonaati</b>	lemonade	<b>psýkologi</b>	psychologist
<b>psýkologia</b>	psychology	<b>búlevardi</b>	boulevard		

Finnish sentence intonation is generally falling, but the first syllable of the final word of a sentence can nevertheless be pronounced with a rising intonation without the word being given a strong stress. In the following examples the intonation contour is shown above the sentence.

	<b>Huomenna Pekka lähtee Helsinkiin.</b>	Tomorrow Pekka is going to Helsinki.
	<b>Illalla menen ravintolaan tanssimaan.</b>	In the evening I'm going dancing at a restaurant.



**Urho Kekkonen oli Suomen presidentti**

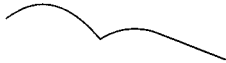
Urho Kekkonen was the  
President of Finland.

When a word needs to be given particularly strong emphasis this is done by means of intonation. In addition, such a word is often moved to the beginning of the sentence.



**Kalle söi omenan!**

Kalle ate an apple!



**Omenan Kalle söi!**

It was an apple that Kalle ate!



**Turkuun minä lähdän, en Helsinkiin!**

I'm going to Turku, not to  
Helsinki!

## §11 VOWEL HARMONY

Many endings occur in two forms with alternative vowels, e.g. **-ssa** ~ **-ssä** 'in', **-ko** ~ **-kö** (interrogative), **-nut** ~ **-nyt** (past participle). These vowel alternations form three pairs; each pair has one back vowel and one front vowel.

<i>Back vowel</i>	<i>Front vowel</i>	<i>Example</i>
<b>a</b>	<b>ä</b>	<b>-ssa</b> ~ <b>-ssä</b>
<b>o</b>	<b>ö</b>	<b>-kö</b> ~ <b>-kö</b>
<b>u</b>	<b>y</b>	<b>-nut</b> ~ <b>-nyt</b>

If a given ending contains one of these six vowels, there will also exist a parallel ending with the other vowel of the pair. If we have the ending **-han** 'emphasis', there will also be **-hän**; if **-koon** (third p. sing. imp.), then also **-köön**, etc. The vowels of the stem determine which ending of the pair is to be chosen.

If the stem contains one or more of the vowels **u, o, a**, the ending also has to have a back vowel (**u, o, a**). If the stem has no back vowels, the ending has to have a front vowel (**y, ö, ä**).

*Ending with back vowel*

<b>talo/ssa</b>	in the house
<b>Turu/ssa</b>	in Turku
<b>Pori/ssa</b>	in Pori
<b>Porvoo/ssa</b>	in Porvoo
<b>poja/lla</b>	boy
<b>auto/lla</b>	by car
<b>kato/lla</b>	on the roof
<b>naise/lla</b>	from the woman
<b>Kekkoise/lla</b>	from Kekkonen
<b>sisare/lla</b>	from the sister
<b>he tule/vat</b>	they come
<b>he sano/vat</b>	they say
<b>on luke/nut</b>	has read
<b>tuoko?</b>	that?
<b>tuossa/ko?</b>	in that?
<b>kirja/han</b>	book (+emphasis)
<b>kirja/ssa/han</b>	in the book (+emphasis)
<b>Turu/sta/ko?</b>	from Turku?
<b>kahvi/la/ssa/han</b>	in the café (+emphasis)

*Ending with front vowel*

<b>kylä/ssä</b>	in the village
<b>käde/ssä</b>	in the hand
<b>vene/ssä</b>	in the boat
<b>Helsinki/ssä</b>	in Helsinki
<b>äidi/llä</b>	mother
<b>tä/llä</b>	with this
<b>miehe/llä</b>	man
<b>Ville/llä</b>	from Ville
<b>tyttö/llä</b>	from the girl
<b>velje/llä</b>	from the brother
<b>he syö/vät</b>	they eat
<b>he mene/vät</b>	they go
<b>on pitä/nyt</b>	has kept
<b>tämä/kö?</b>	this?
<b>tä/ssä/kö?</b>	in this?
<b>kynä/hän</b>	pen (+emphasis)
<b>kynä/llä/hän</b>	with a pen (+emphasis)
<b>Kemi/stä/kö?</b>	from Kemi?
<b>kylpy/lä/ssä/hän</b>	at the bathing resort (+emph.)

Some recent words of foreign origin which contain conflicting combinations of harmony vowels fluctuate in ending selection, e.g. **amatööri** ‘amateur’ : **amatööri/na** (recommended usage) ‘as an amateur’ ~ **amatööri/nä**.

### 3 A SURVEY OF WORD STRUCTURE

- *Nominals and their endings*
- *Finite verb forms and their endings*
- *Non-finite verb forms and their endings*

#### §12 NOMINALS AND THEIR ENDINGS

Nominals are nouns, adjectives, pronouns and numerals, i.e. words like the following:

<i>Nouns</i>	<i>Adjectives</i>	<i>Pronouns</i>	<i>Numerals</i>
<b>auto</b> car	<b>iso</b> big	<b>minä</b> I	<b>yksi</b> one
<b>katu</b> street	<b>kallis</b> expensive	<b>he</b> they	<b>kymmenen</b> ten
<b>nainen</b> woman	<b>pitkä</b> long	<b>tämä</b> this	<b>toinen</b> second
<b>hinta</b> price	<b>vanha</b> old	<b>se</b> it	<b>seitsemäs</b> seventh

These four word classes take the same endings, they are inflected in the same way. In addition to derivational suffixes, Finnish nominals can take four kinds of endings: number and case endings, possessive suffixes, and enclitic particles. The main features of all these will be introduced here, and they will be discussed in more detail in later chapters. For the purpose of understanding how Finnish words are made up, it is important to get a grasp of their maximal structure and see how the endings follow one another in a fixed sequence. Occasionally, there may be even four or five endings occurring one after another in the same word.

The Finnish number system has two terms: singular and plural. The singular is never marked by an ending. The plural has two endings: **-t** in the nominative or basic form, and **-i-** in all other cases. The ending **-i-** sometimes takes the shape **-j-**.

<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
<b>auto</b>	car	<b>auto/t</b>	cars
<b>auto/ssa</b>	in the car	<b>auto/i/ssa</b>	in the cars
<b>auto/sta</b>	from the car	<b>auto/i/sta</b>	from the cars
<b>auto/on</b>	into the car	<b>auto/i/hin</b>	into the cars
<b>auto/lla</b>	by (the) car	<b>auto/i/lla</b>	by (the) cars
<b>pullo</b>	bottle	<b>pullo/t</b>	bottles
<b>pullo/sta</b>	out of the bottle	<b>pullo/i/sta</b>	out of the bottles
<b>pullo/lla</b>	with a bottle	<b>pullo/i/lla</b>	with the bottles
<b>pullo/a</b>	bottle ( <i>partitive</i> )	<b>pullo/j/a</b>	some bottles

Finnish has some 15 cases. The table below shows the grammatical names of the cases, their endings and basic meanings or functions. The principle of vowel harmony (§11) determines whether the ending variant contains a front or a back vowel.

<i>System of cases</i>				
<i>Case</i>	<i>Endings</i>	<i>Function</i>	<i>Example</i>	<i>Translation<sup>1</sup></i>
<i>Nominative</i>	– (pl. <b>-t</b> )	(basic form)	<b>auto</b>	car
<i>Genitive</i>	<b>-n; -den, -tten</b>	possession	<b>auto/n</b>	of the car
<i>Accusative</i>	<b>-n, -t, –</b>	object ending	<b>häne/t</b>	him, her
<i>Partitive</i>	<b>-a ~ -ä;</b>	indefinite	<b>maito/a</b>	(some) milk
	<b>-ta ~ -tä;</b>	quantity	<b>vet/tä</b>	(some) water
	<b>-tta ~ -ttä</b>		<b>perhe/ttä</b>	(some) family
<i>Inessive</i>	<b>-ssa ~ -ssä</b>	inside	<b>auto/ssa</b>	in the car
<i>Elicative</i>	<b>-sta ~ -stä</b>	out of	<b>auto/sta</b>	out of the car
<i>Illative</i>	<b>-Vn, -hVn,<sup>2</sup></b>	into	<b>auto/on</b>	into the car
	<b>-seen, -siin</b>		<b>maa/han</b>	into the country
			<b>Porvoo/seen</b>	to Porvoo
<i>Adessive</i>	<b>-lla ~ -llä</b>	on; instrument	<b>pöytä/llä</b>	on the table
<i>Ablative</i>	<b>-lta ~ -ltä</b>	off	<b>pöytä/ltä</b>	off the table
<i>Allative</i>	<b>-lle</b>	onto	<b>pöytä/lle</b>	onto the table
<i>Essive</i>	<b>-na ~ -nä</b>	state	<b>opettaja/na</b>	as a teacher
<i>Translative</i>	<b>-ksi</b>	change of state	<b>opettaja/ksi</b>	(become) a teacher
<i>Comitative</i>	<b>-ine-</b>	accompanying	<b>vaimo/ine/ni</b>	with my wife
<i>Instructive</i>	<b>-n</b>	(idiomatic)	<b>jala/n</b>	on foot

Listed below are the possessive suffixes; with the exception of the third person, the endings are different for each person.

1 *Translator's note:* With the adessive and translative cases there is often no straightforward equivalent in English that can be used to gloss examples of isolated words. The meanings of these cases are explained in the relevant chapters below, but in the tables and short examples of the book the conventions adopted are as follows. The adessive ending is glossed 'on' where this could make sense ('on the table'), 'with' where an instrument interpretation would be more natural ('with a hammer'), 'at' or 'in' for places, and "'at'" for people, etc. since in these latter contexts the adessive case commonly marks the possessor (**minulla on** 'I have', glossed literally as "'at" me is'). The translative is glossed 'to (become)+nominal' in order to indicate how it would be usually understood in context; thus e.g. **punaiseksi** would be glossed 'to (become) red', since the form would typically occur in such contexts as 'it became/turned/changed to red'. The essive is usually glossed 'as', although this might not be natural in all contexts. And the partitive is simply marked 'partitive', since it often corresponds to 'no article' in English.

2 The sign **-V-** indicates a vowel which is the same as the nearest preceding vowel, e.g. **Turku/un** 'to Turku', **Helsinki/in** 'to Helsinki', **maa/han** 'into the country', **tie/hen** 'to the road'.

*Singular*

<i>First person</i>	<b>(minun) kirja/ni</b>	my book
<i>Second person</i>	<b>(sinun) kirja/si</b>	your book
<i>Third person</i>	<b>hänen kirja/nsa</b>	his/her book

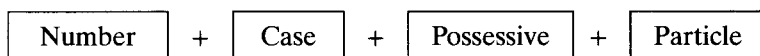
*Plural*

<i>First person</i>	<b>(meidän) kirja/mme</b>	our book
<i>Second person</i>	<b>(teidän) kirja/nne</b>	your book
<i>Third person</i>	<b>heidän kirja/nsa</b>	their book

The fourth group of suffixes is that of the enclitic particles; these occur also with finite and non-finite verb forms. The most common particles are **-kin** ‘also’, **-kaan ~ -kään** ‘(not...) either’, **-ko ~ -kö** ‘interrogative’, **-han ~ -hän** ‘emphasis’, and **-pa ~ -pä** ‘emphasis’.<sup>3</sup> Examples:

<b>Sinä/<u>kö</u> tulit?</b>	Was it you who came?
<b>Kekkonen/<u>ko</u> lähti Moskovaan?</b>	Was it Kekkonen who went to Moscow?
<b>Sinä/<u>hän</u> tulit.</b>	It was you who came.
<b>Sinä/<u>kin</u> tulit.</b>	You came too.
<b>Kekkonen/<u>kin</u> tuli.</b>	Kekkonen came too.
<b>Sinä/<u>kään</u> et tullut.</b>	You did not come either.
<b>Kekkonen/<u>kaan</u> ei tullut.</b>	Kekkonen did not come either.
<b>Kekkonen/<u>ko/han</u> lähti Moskovaan?</b>	Was it really Kekkonen who went to Moscow?
<b>Vo/isi/tte/<u>ko</u> tulla?</b>	Could you ( <i>plural</i> ) come?
<b>Vo/isi/tte/<u>ko/han</u> tulla?</b>	Could you ( <i>plural</i> ) come, please?

A Finnish nominal can have endings from all of the above four groups, but the order in which the endings occur is fixed:



More examples are given in the diagram on the next page. Each column of endings also shows how many endings there are of that type. Root here means the basic form of the word, without any ending. Some roots have different stems depending upon which ending immediately follows. For example, the root **käsi** ‘hand’ has the stem **käde-** if certain case endings

<sup>3</sup> *Translator’s note:* Both **-han** and **-pa** are glossed ‘emphasis’ since an idiomatic translation in English would usually have to be structurally rather different. However, the two particles are not synonymous. The particle **-han** often has the sense ‘I assume you know’ (**Mutta sehän on kallis** ‘But it’s expensive, isn’t it?’), while **-pa** is closer to surprise or pure emphasis (**Onpa kallis!** ‘That is expensive!’). Furthermore, **-han** often functions as a politeness marker and corresponds to the English word ‘please’.

follow, as in the word **käde/ssä** ‘in the hand’ (inessive case). Note that if a word contains derivational suffixes these occur between the root and the number ending.

<i>Structure of nominals</i>						
<i>Root</i>	<i>Number</i>	<i>Case</i>	<i>Poss</i>	<i>Particle</i>	<i>Whole</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
	(2)	(15)	(6)	(6)	<i>example</i>	
<b>pullo</b>					<b>pullo</b>	bottle
<b>pullo t</b>					<b>pullot</b>	bottles
<b>pullo</b>		<b>ssa</b>			<b>pullossa</b>	in the bottle
<b>pullo</b>			<b>ni</b>		<b>pulloni</b>	my bottle
<b>pullo</b>				<b>kin</b>	<b>pullokin</b>	the bottle too
<b>pullo i</b>		<b>sta</b>			<b>pulloista</b>	out of the bottles
<b>pullo</b>		<b>sta</b>	<b>ni</b>		<b>pullostani</b>	out of my bottle
<b>pullo</b>		<b>ssa</b>		<b>han</b>	<b>pullossahan</b>	in the bottle (+ emphasis)
<b>pullo t</b>				<b>kin</b>	<b>pullotkin</b>	the bottles too
<b>pullo</b>		<b>ssa</b>	<b>si</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>pullossasiko</b>	in your bottle?
<b>pullo i</b>		<b>ssa</b>	<b>mme</b>		<b>pulloissamme</b>	in our bottles
<b>pullo i</b>		<b>sta</b>		<b>kaan</b>	<b>pulloistakaan</b>	(not) out of the bottles, either
<b>pullo i</b>		<b>ssa</b>	<b>nne</b>	<b>kin</b>	<b>pulloissannekin</b>	in your bottles too
<b>hylly</b>		<b>ssä</b>			<b>hyllyssä</b>	in the shelf
<b>hylly</b>		<b>llä</b>			<b>hyllyllä</b>	on the shelf
<b>hylly</b>			<b>si</b>		<b>hyllysi</b>	your shelf
<b>hylly</b>		<b>lle</b>	<b>si</b>		<b>hyllyllesi</b>	onto your shelf
<b>hylly</b>		<b>ltä</b>		<b>kö</b>	<b>hyllyltäkö</b>	off the shelf?
<b>hylly t</b>				<b>kö</b>	<b>hyllytkö</b>	shelves?
<b>hylly</b>		<b>n</b>		<b>hän</b>	<b>hyllynhän</b>	of the shelf (+ emphasis)
<b>talo</b>		<b>on</b>			<b>taloon</b>	into the house
<b>(heidän) talo</b>			<b>nsa</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>heidän talonsako</b>	their house?
<b>(hänen) hylly</b>			<b>nsä</b>		<b>hänen hyllynsä</b>	his/her shelf
<b>hylly i</b>		<b>llä</b>	<b>mme</b>		<b>hyllyillämme</b>	on our shelves

### §13 FINITE VERB FORMS AND THEIR ENDINGS

A finite verb form means a form with a personal ending, e.g. (**minä**) **tule/n** ‘I come’, **sinä tule/t** ‘you come’, **Maija tule/e** ‘Maija comes’. In addition to person, Finnish finite verb forms also inflect for tense, mood and the passive. The passive forms contain two endings: that of the passive itself, and also a personal ending **-Vn**. The enclitic particles can also be attached to finite verb forms.



There are six personal endings, one for each grammatical person. The personal pronouns occurring before the verbs in the first and second person singular and plural are frequently omitted.

*Singular*

<i>First person</i>	<b>(minä) puhu<u>n</u></b>	I speak
<i>Second person</i>	<b>(sinä) puhu<u>t</u></b>	you (sing.) speak
<i>Third person</i>	<b>hän puhu<u>u</u></b>	he/she speaks

*Plural*

<i>First person</i>	<b>(me) puhu/<u>mme</u></b>	we speak
<i>Second person</i>	<b>(te) puhu/<u>tte</u></b>	you (pl.) speak
<i>Third person</i>	<b>he puhu/<u>vat</u></b>	they speak

Finnish has two simple tenses: present, which indicates non-past time, and past, which indicates past time. There is no separate ending for the present, and the ending for the past tense is *-i-*. The personal endings occur after the tense ending.

*Present*

<b>minä puhu/n</b>	I speak
<b>me sano/mme</b>	we say
<b>he sano/vat</b>	they say
<b>te seiso/tte</b>	you (pl.) stand

*Past*

<b>minä puhu/i/n</b>	I spoke
<b>me sano/i/mme</b>	we said
<b>he sano/i/vat</b>	they said
<b>te seiso/i/tte</b>	you (pl.) stood

Finnish has four moods, which express for example the speaker's attitude to the content of the message.

*Mood**Indicative**Conditional**Potential**Imperative**Form*

Ø

**-isi-****-ne-** (and other variants)

see below

The indicative is the most common of the moods; it has no ending, and represents an action as a fact or as something that has happened. The conditional mood is mainly used in conditional clauses; cf. English 'would'. The potential is a rare mood, presenting an action as possible or likely.

The personal ending is attached after the tense ending. The fourth mood, the imperative, is different in that its own ending either merges with the personal ending so that the two become indistinguishable (second person plural), or is followed by personal endings that are specific to this mood (third person singular and plural).

	<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
<i>First person</i>	–		<b>sano/kaa/mme</b>	let us say
<i>Second person</i>	<b>sano</b>	say!	<b>sano/kaa</b>	say!
<i>Third person</i>	<b>sano/ko/on</b>	may he say	<b>sano/ko/ot</b>	may they say

The most common form is the second person singular, which has no ending. Because of vowel harmony the endings for the other persons also have front-vowel variants: **vie/köön** ‘may he take’, **vie/käämme** ‘let us take’, **vie/kää** ‘take!’, **vie/kööt** ‘may they take’. The third person imperatives express a wish rather than a command, and these forms are rare.

The passive forms indicate that the performer of the action is an indefinite, unspecified person, cf. English ‘one (can say that...).’<sup>4</sup> The endings for the passive itself are **-tta ~ -ttä** and **-ta ~ -tä** depending on the structure of the preceding stem. Sometimes the final vowels a or ä disappear.

These endings are attached directly to the root form of the verb (or the derived stem). Possible tense and mood endings come after the passive ending, and after them comes the passive personal ending **-Vn**, where **V** again stands for a vowel which is the same as the nearest preceding vowel.

<i>Active</i>		<i>Passive</i>	
<b>sano/n</b>	I say	<b>sano/ta/an</b>	one says, it is said
<b>sano/isi/n</b>	I would say	<b>sano/tta/isi/in</b>	one would say
<b>sano/i/n</b>	I said	<b>sano/tt/i/in</b>	one said

To conclude this section, the table on the next page shows the order in which these endings occur. The tense and mood endings are in the same column, since they are mutually exclusive (the same word form may not contain both tense and mood endings). Some of the imperative endings are between those for mood and person, since they have become merged. In final position there may be an enclitic particle.

<sup>4</sup> *Translator’s note:* the passive will usually be glossed with the impersonal ‘one’ in order to show the sense of the Finnish, but a corresponding English passive form will often sound more natural in context (‘one says’—‘it is said’).

<i>Structure of finite verb forms</i>						
<i>Root</i>	<i>Passive ending</i>	<i>Tense, mood ending</i>	<i>Person ending</i>	<i>Particle</i>	<i>Whole example</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>puhu</b>			<b>n</b>		<b>puhun</b>	I speak
<b>puhu</b>			<b>mme</b>		<b>puhumme</b>	we speak
<b>puhu</b>	<b>i</b>		<b>tte</b>		<b>puhuitte</b>	you spoke
<b>(he) puhu</b>	<b>isi</b>		<b>vat</b>		<b>(he) puhuisivat</b>	they would speak
<b>puhu</b>			<b>t</b>	<b>han</b>	<b>puhuthan</b>	you will speak!
<b>sano</b>	<b>i</b>		<b>n</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>sanoinko?</b>	did I say?
<b>sano</b>	<b>isi</b>		<b>mme</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>sanoisimmeko?</b>	should we say?
<b>sano ta</b>			<b>an</b>		<b>sanotaan</b>	one says, it is said
<b>sano tta</b>	<b>isi</b>		<b>in</b>		<b>sanottaisiin</b>	one would say
<b>sano tt</b>	<b>i</b>		<b>in</b>	<b>han</b>	<b>sanottiinhan</b>	one did say!
<b>sano tta</b>	<b>ne</b>		<b>en</b>		<b>sanottaneen</b>	one may say
<b>sano</b>		<b>kaa</b>			<b>sanokaa</b>	say ( <i>imperative</i> )
<b>sano</b>		<b>kaa</b>		<b>pa</b>	<b>sanokaapa</b>	say ( <i>imperative + emphasis</i> )
<b>sano</b>		<b>kaa</b>	<b>mme</b>		<b>sanokaamme</b>	let us say
<b>sano</b>		<b>ko</b>	<b>ot</b>		<b>sanokoot</b>	may they say
<b>sano tta</b>	<b>ko</b>		<b>on</b>		<b>sanottakoon</b>	may, let one say
<b>saa</b>			<b>n</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>saanko</b>	do I get?
<b>sa</b>		<b>isi</b>	<b>n</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>saisinko</b>	might I get?
<b>sa</b>		<b>i</b>	<b>t</b>	<b>han</b>	<b>saithan</b>	you did get
<b>syö t</b>	<b>i</b>		<b>in</b>		<b>syötiin</b>	one ate
<b>syö tä</b>	<b>isi</b>		<b>in</b>		<b>syötäisiin</b>	one would eat
<b>syö tä</b>	<b>isi</b>		<b>in</b>	<b>kö</b>	<b>syötäisiinkö</b>	might one eat?
<b>syö t</b>	<b>i</b>		<b>in</b>	<b>kin</b>	<b>syötiinkin</b>	one also ate

## §14 NON-FINITE VERB FORMS AND THEIR ENDINGS

Non-finite verb forms are those which, unlike finite verbs, do not contain personal endings. There are two kinds of non-finite forms: infinitives and participles. As regards the way they are used, infinitives can be compared to nouns and participles to adjectives.

Characteristic of non-finite verb forms is a function ending which does not usually carry any real meaning but simply indicates that 'this is a non-finite form'. Some non-finite forms are inflected in the passive like finite verbs (participles, and the inessive case of the second infinitive). Unlike finite verbs, but like nouns, non-finite forms often take a case ending and a possessive suffix. Participles are also inflected for number. Enclitic particles can be attached to all non-finite forms.

Finnish has three important infinitives. The main one is the first infinitive, which is the dictionary form of a verb. Each infinitive has its own function ending indicating which infinitive it is. Case inflection in the

infinitives is very defective. The first infinitive occurs in only two cases (nominative and translative), the second also in only two (inessive and instructive), and the third in six (inessive, elative, illative, adessive, abessive and instructive). Infinitives do not appear in the plural. With some cases infinitives may also take a possessive suffix.

<i>Infinitives</i>			
	<i>Function ending</i>	<i>Example</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<i>First</i>	<b>-a ~ -ä</b>	<b>sano/a</b>	(to) say
	<b>-da ~ -dä</b>	<b>syö/dä</b>	(to) eat
	<b>-ta ~ -tä</b>	<b>juos/ta</b>	(to) run
<i>Second</i>	<b>-e-</b>	<b>sano/e/ssa/ni</b>	while I say
	<b>-de-</b>	<b>syö/de/ssä/mme</b>	while we eat
	<b>-te-</b>	<b>juos/te/n</b>	running
<i>Third</i>	<b>-ma- ~ -mä-</b>	<b>syö/mä/llä</b>	by eating
		<b>sano/ma/tta</b>	without saying
		<b>sano/ma/an</b>	(in order) to say

Finnish has two participles, the present and the past, which have almost the same function as ordinary adjectives; they also occur in the compound forms of verbs. Participles also have passive forms. Being similar to adjectives, participles take all cases and are also inflected for number. They can sometimes take possessive suffixes. The active participles are given below.

<i>Active participles</i>			
	<i>Function ending</i>	<i>Example</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<i>Present</i>	<b>-va ~ -vä</b>	<b>juo/va</b>	drinking
		<b>syö/vä</b>	eating
<i>Past</i>	<b>-nut ~ -nyt</b>	<b>juo/nut</b>	drunk
		<b>syö/nyt</b>	eaten

The following table shows the structure of the non-finite verb forms, and the order in which the endings occur.

Structure of non-finite verb forms									
Root	Passive ending	Non-finite ending	Number ending	Case ending	Poss. ending	Particle ending	Whole example	Meaning	
puhu	a	a	kse	si			puhua	(to) speak	
puhu	a	a	lla				puhuaksesi	in order for you to speak	
puhu	ma	ma					puhumalla	by speaking	
syö	dä	dä	kse	mme			syödäksemme	(to) eat	
syö	va	va			kin		syödäksemme	in order for us to eat	
puhu	va	va	ssa		kin		puhuvakin	(the) speaking (one) too	
puhu	v	v	ssa		kin		puhuvassakin	in the speaking (one) too	
puhu	va	va		i	kin		puhuvissakin	in the speaking (ones) too	
puhu	nut	nut		t			puhuvat	(the) speaking (ones)	
puhu	nee	nee		t			puhunut	(has) spoken	
syö	miä	miä			än		puhuneet	(have) spoken	
juo	ma	ma			an		syömään	(in order) to eat	
juo	ma	ma			an		juomaan	(in order) to drink	
syö	miä	miä			ttä	ko	juomaanko	(in order) to drink?	
juo	ma	ma			ttä	han	syömättä	without eating	
juo	ta	ta					juomattahan	without drinking (+ emphasis)	
sano	ttu	ttu					juotava	that can be drunk	
sano	tu	tu			sta		sanottu	(one has) said	
sano	fta	fta					sanotusta	out of the said (thing)	
sano	fta	fta			lla		sanottava	(the) to-be-said (thing)	
sano	fta	fta			lla		sanottavalla	by the to-be-said (thing)	
sano	fta	fta			i		sanottavilla	by the to-be-said (things)	
sano	fta	fta			v	ko	sanottavissako	in the to-be-said (things)?	
syö	tä	e			ssä		syötäessä	while one eats	

(on)  
(ovat)

(on)

Root	Passive ending	Non-finite ending	Number ending	Case ending	Poss. ending	Particle ending	Whole example	Meaning
vetä		mä		llä		hän	vetämällähän	by pulling (+ emphasis)
vetä		e		ssä	si		vetäessäsi	while you pull
vetä		e		ssä	ni		vetäessäni	while I pull
syö	ty	ä			mme		syötyämme	we having eaten
(Kallen) syö		vä		n			syövän	(Kalle) eating
syö		de		ssä	än		syödessään	while he/she eats

## 4 TWO IMPORTANT SOUND ALTERNATIONS

- *Consonant gradation (p, t, k)*
- *Vowel changes before -i- endings*

### §15 CONSONANT GRADATION (p, t, k)

It would be easy to form Finnish words if all the endings were attached mechanically one after the other according to the patterns given above for nominals and finite and non-finite verb forms. But the adding of endings is in fact a more complex matter, since endings are often accompanied by sound alternations (changes) in the stem (to the left of the ending).

The most important of these alternations is that known as consonant gradation, which affects the long and short stops **p**, **t** and **k**. Section 15.1 below outlines the various types of alternation. Section 15.2 deals with the conditions determining the changes, and also presents some important rules. Sections 15.3–5 contain a great many examples to show how the rules are applied, and section 15.6 gives some special cases. The form to which the rules of consonant gradation are applied is called the ‘strong grade’, and the resulting alternative form is called the ‘weak grade’ (occasionally indicated by a ‘+’ prefixed to the word).

### §15.1 THE TYPES OF CONSONANT GRADATION

The long consonants **pp**, **tt**, **kk** alternate with the corresponding short consonants **p**, **t**, **k**. This is called quantitative consonant gradation.

- |                          |               |          |                  |                 |
|--------------------------|---------------|----------|------------------|-----------------|
| (1) <b>pp</b> ~ <b>p</b> | <b>kaappi</b> | cupboard | <b>kaapi/ssa</b> | in the cupboard |
| (2) <b>tt</b> ~ <b>t</b> | <b>matto</b>  | mat      | <b>mato/lla</b>  | on the mat      |
| (3) <b>kk</b> ~ <b>k</b> | <b>kukka</b>  | flower   | <b>kuka/n</b>    | of the flower   |

The short consonants generally alternate with other consonants; however, **k** may sometimes be dropped altogether. These alternations are called qualitative consonant gradation (types (4)–(16)).

- |                           |               |        |                 |               |
|---------------------------|---------------|--------|-----------------|---------------|
| (4) <b>p</b> ~ <b>v</b>   | <b>tupa</b>   | hut    | <b>tuya/ssa</b> | in the hut    |
| (5) <b>Vt</b> ~ <b>Vd</b> | <b>katu</b>   | street | <b>kadull/a</b> | on the street |
| (6) <b>ht</b> ~ <b>hd</b> | <b>lähte-</b> | leave  | <b>lähde/n</b>  | I leave       |
| (7) <b>k</b> ~ <b>ø</b>   | <b>jalka</b>  | foot   | <b>jala/n</b>   | of the foot   |

The consonant **t** changes to **d** both after a vowel, **V** (= a vowel which is the same as the nearest preceding vowel), and after **h**. A different type of

alternation takes place in the following five cases, where either **p, t, k** occur after a nasal consonant (**m, n, ?**), or **t** occurs after **l** or **r**.

- |      |                            |               |       |                  |              |
|------|----------------------------|---------------|-------|------------------|--------------|
| (8)  | <b>mp</b> ~ <b>mm</b>      | <b>ampu-</b>  | shoot | <b>ammu/mme</b>  | we shoot     |
| (9)  | <b>nt</b> ~ <b>nn</b>      | <b>ran̄ta</b> | shore | <b>ranna/lla</b> | on the shore |
| (10) | <b>nk</b> ~ <b>ng</b> [??] | <b>kenk̄ä</b> | shoe  | <b>kengä/n</b>   | of the shoe  |
| (11) | <b>lt</b> ~ <b>ll</b>      | <b>kult̄a</b> | gold  | <b>kulla/n</b>   | of the gold  |
| (12) | <b>rt</b> ~ <b>rr</b>      | <b>par̄ta</b> | beard | <b>parra/ssa</b> | in the beard |

Alternations (4)–(7) operate when the stops are not preceded by a nasal consonant or **l** or **r**: in such cases alternations (8)–(12) apply. In addition to these there are also four fairly rare alternations applying to **k**.

- |      |                         |                  |          |                 |              |
|------|-------------------------|------------------|----------|-----------------|--------------|
| (13) | <b>lke</b> ~ <b>lje</b> | <b>polke-</b>    | trample  | <b>polje/n</b>  | I trample    |
| (14) | <b>rke</b> ~ <b>rje</b> | <b>särke-</b>    | break    | <b>särje/n</b>  | I break      |
| (15) | <b>hke</b> ~ <b>hje</b> | <b>rohkene/t</b> | you dare | <b>rohjet/a</b> | (to) dare    |
| (16) | <b>k</b> ~ <b>v</b>     | <b>puku</b>      | dress    | <b>puvu/n</b>   | of the dress |

Alternations (13)–(15) are very similar: in each of these **k** changes to **j** before **e**. Type (16) is rare, and occurs only in a few nominals, when **k** is preceded and followed by **u/y**.

## §15.2 THE RULES OF CONSONANT GRADATION

All the alternations (1)–(16) are determined by the same set of conditions. Stops change in the stem of words with two or more syllables when certain endings are added. The change is determined partly by the vowels between the stop and the ending (alternation occurs only if the vowels are short; there is no alternation if this position is taken by a long vowel or a consonant), and partly by the following ending (alternation is caused only by certain types of case and personal ending). The following rule A applies to all words, nominals as well as verbs.

### *Rule A*

In polysyllabic stems long and short **p, t, k** are subject to consonant gradation if they are followed by an ending which:

- A(a) consists of only one consonant or
- A(b) begins with two consonants,  
and also on condition that
- A(c) between **p, t, k** and the ending there is only a short vowel or a diphthong (not consonants or a syllable boundary)
- A(d) the ending causing consonant gradation is usually the case ending in nominals and the personal ending in verbs

Cont...



- A(e) between this ending and the consonants **p, t, k** there can be an **-i-** ending (plural or past tense)
- A(f) alternation never occurs before a long vowel
- A(g) there is no alternation in monosyllabic stems

In addition to the basic rule A there is a second rule B, which governs consonant gradation in verbs only.

*Rule B*

In verbs, **p, t, k**, are always subject to consonant gradation before a short vowel if they occur

- B(a) before the passive ending (e.g. **-tta-** ~ **-ttä-**, **-ta-** ~ **-tä-**)
- B(b) in the second person singular imperative
- B(c) in the present indicative negative

Cases B(b) and B(c) are in fact equivalent, since these verb forms are always the same, e.g. **kerro!** ‘tell!’ ~ **en kerro** ‘I do not tell’; **anna!** ‘give’ ~ **en anna** ‘I do not give’.

The examples below illustrate the way in which the basic rule A is applied to the noun **katto** ‘roof’, where there is alternation between **tt** and **t**. It is the structure of the following case ending that primarily determines whether the alternation occurs or not; the reason is given on the right.

<b>katto</b>	roof	NO	no ending
<b>kato/n</b>	of the roof	YES	ending consists of one consonant
<b>kato/lla</b>	on the roof	YES	ending begins with two consonants
<b>katto/na</b>	as a roof	NO	ending does not consist of one consonant or begin with two
<b>kato/ta</b>	from the roof	YES	ending begins with two consonants
<b>katto/on</b>	into the roof	NO	no alternation before a long vowel
<b>kato/le</b>	onto the roof	YES	ending begins with two consonants
<b>kato/t</b>	roofs	YES	ending consists of one consonant
<b>kato/i/lla</b>	on the roofs	YES	ending begins with two consonants; in between there can be an ending consisting of <b>-i-</b>
<b>katto/i/na</b>	as roofs	NO	see <b>katto/na</b>
<b>kato/ksi</b>	to (become) a roof	YES	ending begins with two consonants

<b>katto/mme</b>	our roof	NO	no alternation before a possessive suffix
<b>katto/kin</b>	a roof, too	NO	ending does not consist of one consonant or begin with two
<b>kato/i/le</b>	onto the roofs	YES	ending begins with two consonants; in between there can be an ending consisting of <b>-i-</b>
<b>katto/i/hin</b>	into the roofs	NO	ending does not consist of one consonant or begin with two
<b>kato/i/ta</b>	from the roofs	YES	ending begins with two consonants; in between there can be an ending consisting of <b>-i-</b>
<b>katto/nne</b>	your roof	NO	no alternation before a possessive suffix
<b>katto/a</b>	roof ( <i>partitive</i> )	NO	ending does not consist of one consonant or begin with two
<b>katto/j/en</b>	of the roofs	NO	same as above; <b>j</b> =the plural <b>i</b>

The two following sections contain further examples of the application of rules A and B, in both nominals and verbs.

### §15.3 APPLYING THE BASIC RULE TO NOMINALS

The table on page 33 shows how consonant gradation applies to the word **katu** ‘street’, where the alternation is of type (5); **t** changes to **d**. The examples are given in the familiar way; the actual word form is written on the right, followed by the reason for the occurrence or non-occurrence of the alternation.

The nominative plural ending **-t** also causes consonant gradation. This form shows both number and case. In accordance with the basic rule, alternation occurs only before short vowels. The vowels of diphthongs are short, and therefore there is usually alternation before a diphthong: **kato/lla** ‘on the roof’ ~ **kato/i/lla** ‘on the roofs’. The latter form has the diphthong **-oi**, before which consonant gradation occurs. (However, the type **renka/i/ssa** ‘in the rings’ is an exception to this diphthong rule: see below.)

Before long vowels the rules of consonant gradation do not apply, even if the case ending does consist of one consonant or begin with two. Nominals with an inflectional stem ending in a long vowel (§19, §20.3) are unaffected by consonant gradation in almost all singular and plural case forms, including those where the otherwise long stem vowel shortens before the plural ending **-i** (§16). The examples below illustrate what happens in the inflection of **rengas** : **renkaa-** ‘ring’.

<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
<b>renkaa/n</b>	of the ring	<b>renkaa/t</b>	rings
<b>renkaa/ssa</b>	in the ring	<b>renka/i/ssa</b>	in the rings
<b>renkaa/sta</b>	out of the ring	<b>renka/i/sta</b>	out of the rings
<b>renkaa/lla</b>	with the ring	<b>renka/i/lla</b>	with the rings
<b>renkaa/na</b>	as a ring	<b>renka/i/na</b>	as rings
<b>renkaa/seen</b>	into the ring	<b>renka/i/seen</b>	into the rings
<b>renkaa/ltä</b>	from the ring	<b>renka/i/ltä</b>	from the rings

In these words the vowel preceding the plural *i* counts as long because it is long in almost all the corresponding singular forms.

In words of the **rengas : renkaa-** type consonant gradation does apply, however, in two case forms: the nominative singular, which ends either in a short vowel+s (§20.3) or in **-e** (§19), and the partitive singular; occasionally also the genitive plural. Cf. **rengas** ‘ring’ (nom. sing.), **rengas/ta** (part. sing.), **rengas/ten** (gen. pl.). Further examples of this type (the basic form is the nominative singular):

<i>Alternation</i>	<i>Stem</i>	<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
(1) <b>pp</b> ~ <b>p</b>	<b>saappaa-</b>	<b>saapas</b>	boot
(2) <b>tt</b> ~ <b>t</b>	<b>rattaa-</b>	<b>ratas</b>	wheel
(3) <b>kk</b> ~ <b>k</b>	<b>rakkaa-</b>	<b>rakas</b>	dear
(4) <b>p</b> ~ <b>v</b>	<b>varpaa-</b>	<b>varyas</b>	toe
(5) <b>t</b> ~ <b>d</b>	<b>hitaa-</b>	<b>hidas</b>	slow
(6) <b>ht</b> ~ <b>hd</b>	<b>tehtaa-</b>	<b>tehdas</b>	factory
(7) <b>k</b> ~ <b>Ø</b>	<b>kokee-</b>	<b>koe</b>	experiment
(8) <b>mp</b> ~ <b>mm</b>	<b>lampaa-</b>	<b>lammas</b>	lamb
(9) <b>nt</b> ~ <b>nn</b>	<b>kintaa-</b>	<b>kinnas</b>	mitten
(10) <b>nk</b> ~ <b>ng</b>	<b>kuninkaa-</b>	<b>kuningas</b>	king
(11) <b>lt</b> ~ <b>ll</b>	<b>altaa-</b>	<b>allas</b>	basin
(12) <b>rt</b> ~ <b>rr</b>	<b>portaa-</b>	<b>porras</b>	step
(13) <b>lke</b> ~ <b>lje</b>	<b>hylkee-</b>	<b>hylje</b>	seal
(15) <b>hke</b> ~ <b>hje</b>	<b>pohkee-</b>	<b>pohje</b>	calf (of leg)

We thus have **saapas** ‘boot’ (nom. sing.) and **saapas/ta** (part. sing.) but **saappaa/n** (gen. sing.), **saappaa/na** (ess. sing.), **saappaa/t** (nom. pl.), **saappa/i/ssa** (iness. pl.), etc.

In three-syllable nominals like **keittiö** ‘kitchen’, **lapio** ‘spade’, **herttua** ‘duke’, where there is a syllable boundary between the two final vowels in the basic form (§9), there is no consonant gradation A(c). They are thus inflected **keittiö/n** (gen. sing.), **keittiö/ssä** (iness. sing.), **keittiö/tä** (part. sing.), **keittiö/i/ssä** (iness. pl.), etc.

How consonant gradation is triggered in certain types of nominals

Root (base)	Number	Case	Poss.	Particle	Whole example	Meaning	Cons. grad.?	Reason
<b>katu</b>	<b>n</b>				<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	of the street	YES	case ending of one consonant
<b>katu</b>		<b>nne</b>			<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	your street	NO	no case ending
<b>katu</b>			<b>kin</b>		<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	the street, too	NO	no case ending
<b>katu</b>	<b>lla</b>				<b>ka<u>l</u>u</b>	on the street	YES	case ending begins with two consonants
<b>katu</b>	<b>na</b>				<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	as a street	NO	case ending is one consonant + vowel
<b>katu</b>	<b>lle</b>				<b>ka<u>l</u>u</b>	onto the street	YES	case ending begins with two consonants
<b>katu</b>	<b>a</b>				<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	street ( <i>partitive</i> )	NO	case ending is vowel
<b>katu</b>	<b>lla</b>				<b>ka<u>l</u>u</b>	on the streets	YES	case ending begins with two consonants
<b>katu</b>		<b>mme</b>	<b>ko</b>		<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	our street?	NO	no case ending
<b>katu</b>	<b>t</b>				<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	streets	YES	case ending of one consonant
<b>katu</b>				<b>han</b>	<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	street (+ <i>emphasis</i> )	NO	no case ending
<b>katu</b>	<b>j</b>	<b>a</b>			<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	streets ( <i>partitive</i> )	NO	case ending is vowel
<b>katu</b>	<b>i</b>	<b>ssa</b>			<b>ka<u>l</u>u</b>	in the streets	YES	case ending begins with two consonants
<b>katu</b>		<b>n</b>		<b>pa</b>	<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	of the street (+ <i>emphasis</i> )	YES	case ending of one consonant
<b>katu</b>		<b>lla</b>	<b>nne</b>		<b>ka<u>l</u>u</b>	from your street	YES	case ending begins with two consonants
<b>katu</b>	<b>i</b>	<b>na</b>			<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	as streets	NO	case ending of consonant + vowel
<b>katu</b>	<b>t</b>		<b>han</b>		<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	streets (+ <i>emphasis</i> )	YES	case ending of one consonant
<b>katu</b>		<b>un</b>			<b>ka<u>n</u>u</b>	into the street	NO	long vowel

## §15.4 APPLYING THE RULES TO VERBS

In verbs the personal ending generally determines whether or not consonant gradation occurs (A(d)). In addition to the basic rule verbs are also governed by rule B: the rules of consonant gradation are always applied before the passive ending, and also in the second person singular imperative and the present indicative negative.

Let us take the verb **kerto-** ‘(to) tell’ as an example: **rt** alternates with **rr** (alternation type (12)). On the right of the table (page 35) there is an indication of whether or not consonant gradation has occurred, and a brief explanation.

Note condition A(e): there may be the past tense ending **-i-** between an alternating **p, t** or **k** and the personal ending. But the rules of consonant gradation cannot be applied if this mid-position contains the conditional **-isi** or the potential **-ne** ending. We therefore have **kerro/i/n** ‘I told’ but **kerto/isi/n** ‘I would tell’ and **kerto/ne/n** ‘I may tell’ (this potential mood form is very rare).

As with nominals, consonant gradation does not occur before long vowels in verbs either (A(c)). In the following important class of verbs, known as contracted verbs (§23.2), there is thus no consonant gradation in the present tense, nor in the past tense although the vowel is shortened (§60).

<i>Present</i>		<i>Past</i>	
<b>hyppää/n</b>	I jump	<b>hyppä/si/n</b>	I jumped
<b>hyppää/t</b>	you (sing.) jump	<b>hyppä/si/t</b>	you (sing.) jumped
<b>(hän) hyppää</b>	he/she jumps	<b>(hän) hyppä/si</b>	he/she jumped
<b>hyppää/mme</b>	we jump	<b>hyppä/si/mme</b>	we jumped
<b>hyppää/tte</b>	you (pl.) jump	<b>hyppä/si/tte</b>	you (pl.) jumped
<b>(he) hyppää/vät</b>	they jump	<b>(he) hyppä/si/vät</b>	they jumped .

In addition, contracted verbs are not affected by consonant gradation in the second person singular imperative, nor in the present indicative negative: **hyppää!** ‘jump’ ~ **en hyppää** ‘I do not jump’. But these verbs do have a few inflected forms where the otherwise long stem vowel is shortened, the second vowel being replaced by a linking consonant **t** comparable to the case and personal endings that do cause consonant gradation (A(a)), e.g. **hyppää/n** ‘I jump’: **hypät/ä** ‘(to) jump’. The following forms are based on a stem containing the linking consonant, and consonant gradation therefore applies.

<i>First infinitive</i>	<b>hypät/ä</b>	(to) jump
<i>Second infinitive</i>	<b>hypät/e/n</b>	jumping
<i>Passive</i>	<b>hypät/t/i/in</b>	one jumped
<i>Imperative</i>	<b>hypät/kää</b>	jump! (plural; not second person sing.)
<i>Past participle</i>	<b>hypän/nyt</b>	jumped ( <i>note: t</i> has changed to <i>n</i> )

How consonant gradation is triggered in certain types of finite verb forms

Root (base)	Passive mood	Tense, Particle	Whole example	Meaning	Cons.	Reason grad.?
<b>kerto</b>		<b>n</b>	<b>kerron</b>	I tell	YES	pers. ending of one cons.
<b>kerto</b>		<b>mme</b>	<b>kerromme</b>	we tell	YES	pers. ending begins with two cons.
<b>kerto</b>	<b>isi</b>	<b>mme</b>	<b>kertoisimme</b>	we would tell	NO	conditional mood <b>-isi-</b>
<b>kerto</b>		<b>an</b>	<b>kerrotaan</b>	one tells	YES	passive
<b>kerto</b>		<b>tte</b>	<b>kerroitte</b>	you (pl.) told	YES	pers. ending begins with two cons.
<b>kerto</b>		<b>vat</b>	<b>kertovat</b>	they tell	NO	pers. ending begins cons. + vowel
<b>kerto</b>		<b>vat</b>	<b>kertoivat</b>	they told	NO	pers. ending begins cons. + vowel
<b>kerto</b>		-	<b>kerro</b>	tell (sing.)!	YES	imperative second person singular
<b>kerto</b>		<b>in</b>	<b>kerrottiin</b>	one told	YES	passive
<b>kerto</b>		<b>o</b>	<b>kertoo</b>	tells	NO	personal ending of a vowel
<b>(en) kerto</b>		-	<b>(en) kerro</b>	(I don't) tell	YES	negative form
<b>kerto</b>		<b>kaa</b>	<b>kertokaa</b>	tell (pl.)!	NO	ending of consonant + vowel
<b>kerto</b>		<b>t</b>	<b>kertot</b>	you (sing.) tell	YES	pers. ending of one cons.
<b>kerto</b>	<b>i</b>	<b>t</b>	<b>keroit</b>	you (sing.) told	YES	pers. ending of one cons.
<b>kerto</b>	<b>ne</b>	<b>tte</b>	<b>kertonette</b>	you (pl.) may tell	NO	potential mood <b>-ne-</b>
<b>kerto</b>		-	<b>kertopa</b>	tell (sing.)! + emph.	YES	second pers. sing. imp.
<b>kerto</b>		<b>tte</b>	<b>kertottehan</b>	you (pl.) tell + emph.	YES	pers. ending begins with two cons.
<b>kerto</b>		<b>t</b>	<b>kertoiko</b>	do you (sing.) tell?	YES	pers. ending of one cons.
<b>kerto</b>	<b>isi</b>	<b>vat</b>	<b>kertoisivatko</b>	would they tell?	NO	conditional mood <b>-isi-</b>

Almost all types of consonant gradation may occur with contracted verbs:

<i>Alternation</i>	<i>sLong vowel stem</i>	<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
(1) <b>pp</b> ~ <b>p</b>	<b>sieppaa-</b>	<b>siepat/a</b>	snatch
(2) <b>tt</b> ~ <b>t</b>	<b>konttaa-</b>	<b>kontat/a</b>	crawl
(3) <b>kk</b> ~ <b>k</b>	<b>hakkaa-</b>	<b>hakat/a</b>	hew
(4) <b>p</b> ~ <b>v</b>	<b>kelpaa-</b>	<b>kelyat/a</b>	be good enough
(5) <b>Vt</b> ~ <b>Vd</b>	<b>hautaa-</b>	<b>haudat/a</b>	bury
(6) <b>ht</b> ~ <b>hd</b>	<b>rahtaa-</b>	<b>rahdat/a</b>	freight
(7) <b>k</b> ~ <b>Ø</b>	<b>makaa-</b>	<b>maat/a</b>	lie
(8) <b>mp</b> ~ <b>mm</b>	<b>kampaa-</b>	<b>kammat/a</b>	comb
(9) <b>nt</b> ~ <b>nn</b>	<b>ryntää-</b>	<b>rynnät/ä</b>	rush
(10) <b>nk</b> ~ <b>ng</b>	<b>hankaa-</b>	<b>hangat/a</b>	rub
(11) <b>lt</b> ~ <b>ll</b>	<b>valtaa-</b>	<b>vallat/a</b>	conquer
(12) <b>rt</b> ~ <b>rr</b>	<b>virtaa-</b>	<b>virrat/a</b>	flow

### §15.5 MORE EXAMPLES OF TYPES OF CONSONANT GRADATION

#### *Quantitative gradation*

(1)	<b>pp</b> ~ <b>p</b>	<b>kauppa</b> shop <b>lamppu</b> lamp <b>tappa-</b> kill	<b>kaupassa</b> in the shop <b>lamput</b> lamps <b>tapan</b> I kill
(2)	<b>tt</b> ~ <b>t</b>	<b>katto</b> roof <b>käyttä-</b> use <b>otta-</b> take	<b>katolla</b> on the roof <b>käytämme</b> we use <b>otan</b> I take
(3)	<b>kk</b> ~ <b>k</b>	<b>takki</b> coat <b>kaikke-</b> everything <b>nukku-</b> sleep	<b>takissani</b> in my coat <b>kaikessa</b> in everything <b>nukuimme</b> we slept

#### *Qualitative gradation*

(4)	<b>p</b> ~ <b>v</b>	<b>kylpe-</b> bathe <b>kipu</b> pain <b>tarpee-</b> need	<b>kylven</b> I bathe <b>kiyussa</b> in pain <b>tarve</b> need
(5)	<b>t</b> ~ <b>d</b>	<b>tietä-</b> know <b>vetä-</b> pull <b>äiti</b> mother	<b>tiedätkö?</b> do you know? <b>vedä!</b> pull! <b>äidille</b> to mother
(6)	<b>ht</b> ~ <b>hd</b>	<b>vihta</b> whisk <b>vaihta-</b> change <b>lehte-</b> newspaper	<b>vihdalla</b> with a whisk <b>vaihdatteko?</b> do you change? <b>lehdessä</b> in the newspaper
(7)	<b>k</b> ~ <b>Ø</b>	<b>joke-</b> river <b>jaka-</b> divide <b>poika</b> boy <b>aika</b> time	<b>joesta</b> out of the river <b>jaamme</b> we divide <b>pojalle</b> to the boy <b>ajassa</b> in time

(8)	<b>mp</b> ~ <b>mm</b>	<b>ampu-</b> <b>kampa</b>	shoot comb	<b>ammutaan</b> <b>kammalla</b>	one shoots with a comb
(9)	<b>nt</b> ~ <b>nn</b>	<b>tunte-</b> <b>anta-</b> <b>ranta</b>	feel give shore	<b>ei tunne</b> <b>annamme</b> <b>rannalla</b>	does not feel we give on the shore
(10)	<b>nk</b> ~ <b>ng</b>	<b>kenkä</b> <b>tunke-</b> <b>tinki-</b> <b>ilta</b>	shoe shove bargain evening	<b>kengästä</b> <b>älä tunge!</b> <b>tingitkö?</b> <b>illalla</b>	out of the shoe don't shove! do you bargain? in the evening
(11)	<b>lt</b> ~ <b>ll</b>	<b>kulta</b> <b>viheltä-</b> <b>kiertä-</b> <b>kerta</b>	gold whistle turn time	<b>kullaksi</b> <b>vihellän</b> <b>kierrä!</b> <b>kerran</b>	to (become) gold I whistle turn! once
(12)	<b>rt</b> ~ <b>rr</b>	<b>kerto-</b> <b>sulke-</b> <b>jälke-</b> <b>kulke-</b> <b>särke-</b> <b>arke-</b>	tell close trace go break everyday	<b>kerronko?</b> <b>suljemme</b> <b>jäljet</b> <b>kuljet</b> <b>särjetkö?</b> <b>arjen</b>	do I tell? we close traces you go do you break? of everyday
(13)	<b>lke</b> ~ <b>lje</b>	<b>rohkene-</b>	dare	<b>rohjeta</b>	(to) dare
(14)	<b>rke</b> ~ <b>rje</b>	<b>suku</b> <b>puku</b> <b>luku</b>	family dress number	<b>suyussa</b> <b>puvut</b> <b>luvun</b>	in the family dresses of a number

Note the exceptional words **poika** ‘boy’ and **aika** ‘time’ (type (7)) where the loss of **k** makes **i** change to **j** in the weak grade. Type (13) and particularly types (14)–(16) are rare.

## §15.6 ADDITIONAL COMMENTS

Besides the case and personal endings dealt with above there are also certain other (derivational) endings which cause consonant gradation, in particular the ending **-sti** on adjectives (which forms adverbs from them), the comparative ending **-mpi** (§85), and the superlative ending **-in** (§86). Note also the semantically negative derivational ending **-ton** ~ **-tön**: **koti** ‘home’ : **kodi/ton** ‘homeless’; **palkka** ‘salary’ : **palka/ton** ‘unsalaried’. (Cf. §93 for more examples of derivational endings that trigger consonant gradation.)

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Adverbs</i>	<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Superlative</i>
<b>kiltti</b>	<b>kilti/sti</b>	<b>kilti/mpi</b>	<b>kilte/in</b>
nice	nicely	nicer	nicest
<b>tarkka</b>	<b>tarka/sti</b>	<b>tarke/mpi</b>	<b>tark/in</b>
accurate	accurately	more accurate	most accurate
<b>helppo</b>	<b>helpo/sti</b>	<b>helpo/mpi</b>	<b>helpo/in</b>
easy	easily	easier	easiest



The derivational endings undergo consonant gradation themselves when they are inflected, for example the comparative **-mpi: helpo/mma/ssa** ‘in the easier (one)’.

The stop consonants **p, t, k** do not undergo consonant gradation when they occur next to **s** or **t**. The consonant **k** in the combination **hk** alternates occasionally.

<b>sk</b>	<b>tasku</b>	pocket	<b>taskusta</b>	out of the pocket
<b>sp</b>	<b>piispa</b>	bishop	<b>piispat</b>	bishops
<b>st</b>	<b>piste</b>	point	<b>pisteet</b>	points
<b>tk</b>	<b>matka</b>	journey	<b>matkalla</b>	on the journey
<b>hk</b>	<b>keuhko</b>	lung	<b>keuhkot</b>	lungs
	<b>vihki-</b>	marry	<b>vihkitte</b>	you marry
<i>Note:</i>	<b>vihko</b>	notebook	<b>vihot</b>	notebooks
<i>Note:</i>	<b>nahka</b>	leather	<b>nahasta</b>	out of leather

Many loan words and proper names do not have consonant gradation. This is particularly true of alternation types (4)–(16).

<b>auto</b>	car	<b>autolla</b>	by car
<b>Malta</b>	Malta	<b>Maltan</b>	of Malta
<b>Kauko</b>	(masc. name)	<b>Kaukalle</b>	to Kauko
<b>Arto</b>	(masc. name)	<b>Artolta</b>	from Arto

## §16 VOWEL CHANGES BEFORE **-i-** ENDINGS

The second important group of sound alternations is the set of vowel changes which often occur before certain endings beginning with **-i**. These endings are:

*In nominals*

the plural **-i-**  
(sometimes **-j-**: see §26)

the superlative **-in**  
(of adjectives)

*In verbs*

the past tense **-i-**

the conditional mood **-isi**

The vowel changes are often the same for all these endings, but there are also some differences. Eight rules are given below. (Consonant gradation is indicated by a prefixed ‘+’.)

(1) The short vowels **-o, -ö, -u, -y** (i.e. rounded vowels) do not change before **-i-** endings.

*Basic form Plural*

<b>talo</b>	<b>taloissa</b>	in the houses
<b>pöllö</b>	<b>pöllöille</b>	to the owls
<b>katu</b>	<b>+kaduille</b>	on the streets
<b>hylly</b>	<b>hyllyissä</b>	in the shelves

*Basic form Past*

<b>sano-</b>	<b>sanoi</b>	said
<b>löhö-</b>	<b>löhöi</b>	lounged
<b>puhu-</b>	<b>puhui</b>	spoke
<b>pysähty-</b>	<b>pysähtyi</b>	stopped

*Basic form Superlative*

<b>helppo</b>	<b>helpoin</b>	easiest
<b>jörö</b>	<b>jöröin</b>	crossed
<b>hullu</b>	<b>hulluin</b>	craziest
<b>pidetty</b>	<b>+pidetyin</b>	most liked

*Conditional*

<b>sanoisi</b>	would say
<b>löhöisi</b>	would lounge
<b>puhui</b>	would speak
<b>pysähtyisi</b>	would stop

(2) A long vowel shortens.

*Basic form Plural*

<b>puu</b>	<b>puita</b>	trees (part.)
<b>maa</b>	<b>maissa</b>	in the countries
<b>sy</b>	<b>syiden</b>	of the reasons
<b>venee-</b>	<b>veneistä</b>	out of the boats
<b>perhee-</b>	<b>perheissä</b>	in the families

*Basic form Superlative*

<b>vapaa</b>	<b>vapain</b>	most free
<b>vakaa</b>	<b>vakain</b>	firmest
<b>tervee-</b>	<b>tervein</b>	healthiest

*Basic form Past*

<b>saa-</b>	<b>sai</b>	got
<b>jää-</b>	<b>jäi</b>	remained
<b>avaa-</b>	<b>avasi</b>	opened
<b>makaa-</b>	<b>makasi</b>	lay (cf. §60)

*Conditional*

<b>saisi</b>	would get
<b>jäisi</b>	would remain
<b>avaisi</b>	would open
<b>makaisi</b>	would lie

(3) The first vowel of the diphthongs **ie**, **uo**, **yö** is dropped.

*Basic form Plural*

<b>tie</b>	<b>teillä</b>	on the roads	(there are no adjectives)
<b>tuo</b>	<b>noissa</b>	in those	
<b>yö</b>	<b>öitä</b>	nights (part.)	
<b>suo</b>	<b>soista</b>	out of the marshes	
<b>työ</b>	<b>töiden</b>	of the works	

*Basic form Past*

<b>vie-</b>	<b>vei</b>	took
<b>juo-</b>	<b>joi</b>	drank
<b>syö-</b>	<b>söi</b>	ate
<b>tuo-</b>	<b>toi</b>	brought
<b>lyö-</b>	<b>löi</b>	hit

*Conditional*

<b>veisi</b>	would take
<b>joi</b>	would drink
<b>söisi</b>	would eat
<b>toisi</b>	would bring
<b>löisi</b>	would hit

(4) **i** is dropped in diphthongs ending in **-i**.

*Basic form Plural*

<b>hai</b>	<b>ha/i/ssa</b>	in the sharks	(there are no adjectives)
<b>koi</b>	<b>ko/i/ta</b>	moths (part.)	
<b>täi</b>	<b>tä/i/den</b>	of the lice	

*Basic form Past*

<b>voi-</b>	<b>vo/i</b>	could
<b>ui-</b>	<b>u/i</b>	swam
<b>nai-</b>	<b>na/i</b>	married

*Conditional*

<b>vo/isi</b>	would be able
<b>u/isi</b>	would swim
<b>na/isi</b>	would marry

(5) Short **e** is always dropped.

*Basic form Plural*

<b>tuule-</b>	<b>tuulia</b>	winds (part.)	<i>Basic form Superlative</i>	<b>nuore-</b>	<b>nuorin</b>	youngest
<b>tule-</b>	<b>tulia</b>	fires (part.)	<b>suore-</b>	<b>suurin</b>	greatest	
<b>lapse-</b>	<b>lapsilla</b>	'at' the children	<b>uute-</b>	<b>uusin</b>	newest	
<b>kiele-</b>	<b>kielinä</b>	as languages				
<b>naise-</b>	<b>naisille</b>	to the women				

*Basic form Past*

<b>tule-</b>	<b>tuli</b>	came
<b>mene-</b>	<b>meni</b>	went
<b>ole-</b>	<b>oli</b>	was
<b>hymyile-</b>	<b>hymyili</b>	smiled
<b>teke-</b>	<b>teki</b>	did
<b>näke-</b>	<b>näki</b>	saw

*Conditional*

<b>tulisi</b>	would come
<b>menisi</b>	would go
<b>olisi</b>	would be
<b>hymyilisi</b>	would smile
<b>tekisi</b>	would do
<b>näkisi</b>	would see

(6) Short **i** changes to **e** before the plural and the superlative, but is dropped before the past tense and the conditional.

*Basic form Plural*

<b>lasi</b>	<b>laseissa</b>	in the glasses
<b>tuoli</b>	<b>tuoleilla</b>	on the chairs
<b>väri</b>	<b>väreinä</b>	as colours
<b>tunti</b>	<b>+tunneilla</b>	in the lessons

*Basic form Superlative*

<b>kiltti</b>	<b>+kiltein</b>	nicest
<b>nätti</b>	<b>+nätein</b>	prettiest

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Past</i>	<i>Conditional</i>
<b>salli-</b> <b>salli/i</b>	allowed	<b>salli/isi</b> would allow
<b>etsi-</b> <b>ets/i</b>	looked for	<b>etsi/isi</b> would look for
<b>oppi-</b> <b>opp/i</b>	learned	<b>oppi/isi</b> would learn
<b>vaati-</b> <b>vaat/i</b>	demanded	<b>vaati/isi</b> would demand

(7) The vowel **ä** is dropped except in the conditional.

<i>Basic form Plural</i>		<i>Basic form Superlative</i>
<b>päivä</b> <b>päiviä</b>	days (part.)	<b>syvä</b> <b>syvin</b> deepest
<b>ystävä</b> <b>ystävillä</b>	'at' the friends	<b>ikävä</b> <b>ikävin</b> dullest
<b>seinä</b> <b>seinien</b>	of the walls	<b>kylmä</b> <b>kylmin</b> coldest
<b>kylä</b> <b>kyliin</b>	into the villages	<b>märkä</b> <b>+märin</b> wettest
<b>hedelmä</b> <b>hedelmiä</b>	fruit (part.)	<b>hämärä</b> <b>hämärin</b> dimmest

<i>Basic form Past</i>		<i>Conditional</i>
<b>vetä-</b> <b>veti</b>	pulled	<b>vetäisi</b> would pull
<b>kestä-</b> <b>kesti</b>	lasted	<b>kestäisi</b> would last
<b>kiittä-</b> <b>kiitti</b>	thanked	<b>kiittäisi</b> would thank
<b>viettä-</b> <b>vietti</b>	spent	<b>viettäisi</b> would spend
<b>tietä-</b> <b>tiesi</b>	knew	<b>tietäisi</b> would know

Contrary to this rule, in some three-syllable nouns **-ä** changes in the plural to **-ö**, e.g. when the only vowel of the preceding syllable is **i**: **kynttilä**, **kynttilö/i/tä** 'candles (part.)'; **tekijä**, **tekijö/i/tä** 'makers (part.)'; **päärynä**, **päärynö/i/ssä** 'in the pears'.

(8) The vowel **a** remains unchanged in the conditional and is dropped in the superlative. In the plural and past tense of two-syllable words **a** changes to **o** if the first vowel is **a**, **e** or **i**, but is dropped if the first vowel is **u** or **o**.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Conditional</i>	
<b>anta-</b>	<b>antaisi</b>	would give
<b>otta-</b>	<b>ottaisi</b>	would take
<b>sata-</b>	<b>sataisi</b>	would rain
<b>muista-</b>	<b>muistaisi</b>	would remember
<b>alka-</b>	<b>alkaisi</b>	would begin

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Superlative</i>	
<b>kova</b>	<b>kovin</b>	hardest
<b>vahva</b>	<b>vahvin</b>	strongest
<b>tarkka</b>	<b>+tarkin</b>	most accurate
<b>vanha</b>	<b>vanhin</b>	oldest
<b>matala</b>	<b>matalin</b>	lowest

<i>Basic form Plural</i>			<i>Basic form Past</i>		
<b>matka</b>	<b>matkoilla</b>	on the journeys	<b>alka-</b>	<b>alkoi</b>	began
<b>kirja</b>	<b>kirjoissa</b>	in the books	<b>anta-</b>	<b>antoi</b>	gave
<b>sana</b>	<b>sanoilla</b>	with words	<b>sata-</b>	<b>satoi</b>	rained
<b>piha</b>	<b>pihoilla</b>	in the yards	<b>kaata-</b>	<b>kaatoi</b>	fell
<b>herra</b>	<b>herrojen</b>	of the masters	<b>raata-</b>	<b>raatoi</b>	toiled

<i>Basic form Plural</i>			<i>Basic form Past</i>		
<b>koira</b>	<b>koirien</b>	of the dogs	<b>otta-</b>	<b>otti</b>	took
<b>poika</b>	<b>poikien</b>	of the boys	<b>muista-</b>	<b>muisti</b>	remembered
<b>muna</b>	<b>munia</b>	eggs (part.)	<b>osta-</b>	<b>osti</b>	bought
<b>kuuma</b>	<b>kuumissa</b>	in the hot	<b>huuta-</b>	<b>huusi</b>	shouted

In nouns with three or more syllables **-a** either changes to **-o** or is dropped; sometimes both changes may be possible. The change to **-o** occurs in particular when (a) the only vowel of the preceding syllable is **i**; (b) **-a** is preceded by a short **l**, **n** or **r**; or (c) **-a** is preceded by two consonants.

(a)	<b>lukija</b>	<b>lukijoiden</b>	of the readers
	<b>apina</b>	<b>apinoilla</b>	'at' the monkeys
	<b>pakina</b>	<b>pakinoissa</b>	in the columns
	<b>vakoilija</b>	<b>vakoilijoille</b>	to the spies
(b)	<b>omena</b>	<b>omenoita</b>	apples (part.)
	<b>ikkuna</b>	<b>ikkunoissa</b>	in the windows
	<b>tavara</b>	<b>tavaroita</b>	things (part.)
	<b>kampela</b>	<b>kampeloita</b>	flounders (part.)
(c)	<b>kirsikka</b>	<b>+kirsikoihin</b>	into the cherries
	<b>vasikka</b>	<b>+vasikoille</b>	to the calves
	<b>sanonta</b>	<b>sanontojen</b>	of the expressions
	<b>jalusta</b>	<b>jalustoilla</b>	on the pedestals

In the plural forms of other nouns of three or more syllables, and of nearly all adjectives, and also in the past tense of verbs with three or more syllables, **-a** is dropped.

<b>kanava</b>	<b>kanavissa</b>	in the canals
<b>korkea</b>	<b>korkeiden</b>	of the high
<b>sanoma</b>	<b>sanomia</b>	messages (part.)
<b>ainoa</b>	<b>ainoissa</b>	in the only

<b>vaik<u>e</u>a</b>	<b>vaikeita</b>	difficult (part.)
<b>ih<u>a</u>na</b>	<b>ihania</b>	lovely (part.)
<b>kam<u>a</u>la</b>	<b>kamalia</b>	frightful (part.)
<b>matk<u>u</u>sta-</b>	<b>matkusti</b>	travelled
<b>pohj<u>u</u>sta-</b>	<b>pohjusti</b>	founded

# 5 THE DECLENSION OF NOMINALS

- *General*
- *Nominals with a basic form in -i*
- *Nominals with a basic form in -e*
- *Nominals with a basic form ending in a consonant*

## §17 GENERAL

Both nominals and verb forms are built up by the addition of endings to stems. For nominals, in general the basic form itself functions as the stem, and in many declension types the basic form remains unchanged when endings are added: e.g. **auto/n**, **auto/ssa**, **auto/on**, **auto/ni**, **auto/kin**. However, sound alternations may sometimes occur with certain endings; **p**, **t** and **k** in the stem are subject to consonant gradation (§15), and the final vowel may change or disappear when an **-i-** ending is added (§16).

A word may sometimes have different stems according to what kind of ending follows. The different stems are formed via sound alternations. Often the basic form (nominative singular), or the basic form and the partitive singular have their own stems, and all other case, number and possessive endings are attached to a second or third stem. This is called the inflectional stem.

Nominals where the basic form differs from the inflectional stem can be divided into three groups. The first consists of nominals with a basic form ending in **-i** and a corresponding inflectional stem in **-e**, e.g. **kieli** 'language' : **kielē/n**. The second group comprises nominals with a basic form ending in **-e** and an inflectional stem in **-ee**, e.g. **perhe** 'family' : **perhee/n**. Finally, in the third group the basic form ends in a consonant which alternates with other sounds in the inflectional stem, e.g. **kysymys** 'question' : **kysymykse/n**.

In the following sections these groups are presented in turn. The inflectional stem is represented by the genitive form, e.g. **kielē/n**, **perhee/n**, **kysymykse/n**. Almost all the other forms can be made by replacing the genitive ending **-n** by other endings, e.g. **kielē/n**, **kielē/ssä**, **kielē/stä**, **kielē/llä**, **kielē/ni**, **kielē/mme**, etc. The following rule is therefore an important one:

All case, number and possessive forms are made from the inflectional stem (although the partitive sometimes has a separate stem).

The rules of consonant gradation and vowel change affect both basic form stems and inflectional stems.

Consonant gradation (§15) and vowel changes before **-i-** endings (§16) also affect inflectional stems.

Some examples now follow of how the inflectional stem **kiele-** is combined with various nominal endings marking case, number and possession.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Inflectional stem+case</i>
<b>kiel̄i</b> language	<b>kiele/n</b> of the language
	<b>kiele/t</b> languages
	<b>kiele/ssä</b> in the language
	<b>kiele/stä</b> out of the language
	<b>kiele/en</b> into the language
	<b>kiele/llä</b> with the language
	<b>kiele/lle</b> to the language
	<b>kiele/nä</b> as the language
	<b>kiel/tä</b> language (part.)

<i>Inflectional stem+plural</i>	<i>Inflectional stem+possessive</i>
<b>kiel/i/ssä</b> in languages	<b>kiele/ni</b> my language
<b>kiel/i/stä</b> out of languages	<b>kiele/si</b> your language
<b>kiel/i/in</b> into languages	<b>kiele/nsä</b> his/her/their language
<b>kiel/i/llä</b> with languages	<b>kiele/mme</b> our language
<b>kiel/i/nä</b> as languages	<b>kiele/nne</b> your language
<b>kiel/i/lle</b> to languages	

Enclitic particles are attached directly to the inflected or uninflected form.

<b>kieli/kin</b>	the language too
<b>kiele/n/hän</b>	of the language+emph.
<b>kiele/ssä/hän</b>	in the language+emph.
<b>kiel/tä/kö?</b>	language? (part.)
<b>kiel/i/ssä/hän</b>	in languages+emph.
<b>kiele/ni/pä</b>	my language+emph.



## §18 NOMINALS WITH A BASIC FORM IN **-i**

### §18.1 TUNTI NOMINALS

Most nominals with a basic form ending in **-i** do not have a separate inflectional stem, but endings are attached directly to the basic form itself (and consonant gradation and vowel change rules consequently apply, §15, §16). These nominals of the type **tunti** ‘hour, lesson’ include the following. The + symbol indicates that the form has undergone consonant gradation.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
		<i>Case</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Poss. suffix</i>
<b>tunti</b>	hour	<b>+tunni/n</b>	<b>+tunne/i/ssa</b>	<b>tunti/mme</b>
<b>merkki</b>	mark	<b>+merki/n</b>	<b>+merke/i/ssä</b>	<b>merkki/mme</b>
<b>väri</b>	colour	<b>väri/n</b>	<b>väre/i/ssä</b>	<b>väri/mme</b>
<b>laki</b>	law	<b>+laji/n</b>	<b>+lae/i/ssa</b>	<b>laki/mme</b>
<b>risti</b>	cross	<b>risti/n</b>	<b>riste/i/ssä</b>	<b>risti/mme</b>
<b>sali</b>	hall	<b>sali/n</b>	<b>sale/i/ssa</b>	<b>sali/mme</b>

### §18.2 KIVI NOMINALS

There are three kinds of nominals with a basic form ending in **-i**, all with an inflectional stem in **-e**. The first group, words like **kivi** ‘stone’, also form the partitive singular from this inflectional stem.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
		<i>Case</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Poss. suffix</i>
<b>kivi</b>	stone	<b>kive/n</b>	<b>kiv/i/ssä</b>	<b>kive/mme</b>
<b>Suomi</b>	Finland	<b>Suome/n</b>	–	<b>Suome/mme</b>
<b>kaikki</b>	all	<b>+kaike/n</b>	<b>+kaik/i/ssa</b>	<b>kaikke/mme</b>
<b>lehti</b>	newspaper	<b>+lehde/n</b>	<b>+lehd/i/ssä</b>	<b>lehte/mme</b>
<b>hetki</b>	moment	<b>hetke/n</b>	<b>hetk/i/ssä</b>	<b>hetke/mme</b>
<b>talvi</b>	winter	<b>talve/n</b>	<b>talv/i/ssa</b>	<b>talve/mme</b>
<b>järvi</b>	lake	<b>järve/n</b>	<b>järv/i/ssä</b>	<b>järve/mme</b>
<b>lahti</b>	bay	<b>+lahde/n</b>	<b>+lahd/i/ssa</b>	<b>lahte/mme</b>
<b>jälki</b>	trace	<b>+jälje/n</b>	<b>+jälj/i/ssä</b>	<b>jälke/mme</b>
<b>joki</b>	river	<b>+joe/n</b>	<b>+jo/i/ssa</b>	<b>joke/mme</b>
<b>nimi</b>	name	<b>nime/n</b>	<b>nim/i/ssä</b>	<b>nime/mme</b>
<b>ovi</b>	door	<b>ove/n</b>	<b>ov/i/ssa</b>	<b>ove/mme</b>

Words like **kivi** thus form their partitive singular from an inflectional stem in **-e**, and differ in precisely this respect from words of the **kieli** type (§18.3) and the **vesi** type (§18.4).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by partitive</i>
<b>kaikk<u>i</u></b>	all	<b>kaikk<u>e</u>/a</b>
<b>Suom<u>i</u></b>	Finland	<b>Suom<u>e</u>/a</b>
<b>kiv<u>i</u></b>	stone	<b>kiv<u>e</u>/ä</b>
<b>leht<u>i</u></b>	newspaper	<b>leht<u>e</u>/ä</b>
<b>hetk<u>i</u></b>	moment	<b>hetk<u>e</u>/ä</b>
<b>ov<u>i</u></b>	door	<b>ov<u>e</u>/a</b>

A comparison of the **tunti** and **kivi** types shows that it is not possible to derive a rule from the basic form which would determine which nominals have an inflectional stem in **-e** and which do not. However, it is possible to state a rule operating in the opposite direction.

Nominals with an inflectional stem ending in short **-e** have a basic form ending in short **-i**.

This rule always allows us to derive the basic form from the inflectional stem. The rule does not cover nominals with an inflectional stem in long **-ee**, such as **perhe** ‘family’, **perhee/n** (§19). There are a few exceptions: **kolme** ‘three’, **kolmen**; **itse** ‘self’, **itsen**; **nalle** ‘teddy’, **nallen**; **nukke** ‘doll’, **+nukken**.

### §18.3 KIELI NOMINALS

**Kieli** type nominals only differ from the **kivi** type in the partitive singular, where the **-e-** of the inflectional stem is dropped. Compare §18.2 and note the partitive singular.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
		<i>Case</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Poss. Suffix</i>
<b>kiel<u>i</u></b>	language	<b>kiel<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>kiel/i/ssä</b>	<b>kiel<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>ver<u>i</u></b>	blood	<b>ver<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>ver/i/ssä</b>	<b>ver<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>mer<u>i</u></b>	sea	<b>mer<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>mer/i/ssä</b>	<b>mer<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>tul<u>i</u></b>	fire	<b>tul<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>tul/i/ssa</b>	<b>tul<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>tuul<u>i</u></b>	wind	<b>tuul<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>tuul/i/ssa</b>	<b>tuul<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>ään<u>i</u></b>	sound	<b>ään<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>ään/i/ssä</b>	<b>ään<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>lum<u>i</u></b>	snow	<b>lum<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>lum/i/ssa</b>	<b>lum<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>un<u>i</u></b>	dream	<b>un<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>un/i/ssa</b>	<b>un<u>e</u>/ni</b>
<b>nuor<u>i</u></b>	young	<b>nuore<u>n</u></b>	<b>nuor/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>suur<u>i</u></b>	great	<b>suure<u>n</u></b>	<b>suur/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>pien<u>i</u></b>	small	<b>piene<u>n</u></b>	<b>pien/i/ssä</b>	–
<b>laps<u>i</u></b>	child	<b>lapse<u>n</u></b>	<b>laps/i/ssa</b>	<b>lapse<u>n</u>/ni</b>

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
		<i>Case (except partitive)</i>		<i>Partitive</i>
<b>kieli</b>	language	<b>kiele/n</b>	<b>kiel/tä</b>	
<b>veri</b>	blood	<b>vere/n</b>	<b>ver/ta</b>	(Note: <b>-ta</b> )
<b>meri</b>	sea	<b>mere/n</b>	<b>mer/ta</b>	(Note: <b>-ta</b> )
<b>tuli</b>	fire	<b>tule/n</b>	<b>tul/ta</b>	
<b>tuuli</b>	wind	<b>tuule/n</b>	<b>tuul/ta</b>	
<b>ääni</b>	sound	<b>ääne/n</b>	<b>ään/tä</b>	
<b>lumi</b>	snow	<b>lume/n</b>	<b>lun/ta</b>	(Note: <b>m ? n</b> )
<b>pieni</b>	small	<b>piene/n</b>	<b>pien/tä</b>	

The **-e** of the inflectional stem is dropped before the partitive singular ending only when it is preceded by certain consonants. The following rule holds:

In the partitive singular **-e-** is dropped if the preceding consonant is **l, r,** or **n;** or **t** occurring after these or after a vowel.

### §18.4 VESI NOMINALS

The rule given above also covers **vesi** nominals. These are a group of words with a basic form in **-si** and an inflectional stem in **-te-**.

In **vesi** nominals **-si** alternates with **-te-**; before the plural **-i-**, **-te-** changes to **-s-**; **-te-** is subject to consonant gradation (§15).

To illustrate the inflectional stem not subject to consonant gradation let us take the illative singular, e.g. **vete/en** ‘into the water’.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>			
		<i>Case (except plural)</i>	<i>Partitive</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>	
<b>vesi</b>	water	<b>vete/en</b>	<b>vet/tä</b>	<b>ves/i/ssä</b>	<b>vete/ni</b>
<b>käsi</b>	hand	<b>käte/en</b>	<b>kät/tä</b>	<b>käsi/ssä</b>	<b>käte/ni</b>
<b>uusi</b>	new	<b>uute/en</b>	<b>uut/ta</b>	<b>uus/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>viisi</b>	five	<b>viite/en</b>	<b>vii/tä</b>	<b>viis/i/ssä</b>	–
<b>toisi</b>	true	<b>tote/en</b>	<b>tot/ta</b>	<b>tos/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>kansi</b>	cover	<b>kante/en</b>	<b>kant/ta</b>	<b>kans/i/ssa</b>	<b>kante/ni</b>
<b>varsi</b>	handle	<b>varte/en</b>	<b>vart/ta</b>	<b>vars/i/ssa</b>	<b>varte/ni</b>

<i>No alternation</i>		<i>Alternation</i>	
<b>vete/nä</b>	as water	<b>+vede/n</b>	of the water
<b>vete/en</b>	into the water	<b>+vede/t</b>	waters
<b>vete/mme</b>	our water	<b>+vede/ssä</b>	in the water
<b>vete/nne</b>	your water	<b>+vede/stä</b>	out of the water
<b>vete/ni</b>	my water	<b>+vede/llä</b>	with water

## §19 NOMINALS WITH A BASIC FORM IN **-e**

The second group of nominals with a special inflectional stem is (almost entirely) made up of nominals with a basic form ending in **-e**. The other inflected forms are made from a stem ending in a long **-ee**. The following points should also be noted.

The partitive singular is formed by adding the ending **-tta ~ -ttä** directly to the basic form.

The rules of consonant gradation apply to the basic form and to the partitive singular, not to the inflectional stem, which has a long vowel (§15.3).

The **-ee-** of the inflectional stem shortens before the plural **-i-** (§16.2).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
			<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>perhe</b>	family	<b>perhe/ttä</b>	<b>perhee/n</b>	<b>perhe/i/ssä</b>	<b>perhee/ni</b>
<b>vene</b>	boat	<b>vene/ttä</b>	<b>venee/n</b>	<b>vene/i/ssä</b>	<b>venee/ni</b>
<b>joukkue</b>	team	<b>joukkue/tta</b>	<b>joukkuee/n</b>	<b>joukkue/i/ssa</b>	<b>joukkuee/ni</b>
<b>+liike</b>	shop	<b>+liike/ttä</b>	<b>liikkee/n</b>	<b>liikke/i/ssä</b>	<b>liikkee/ni</b>
<b>+suhde</b>	relation	<b>+suhde/tta</b>	<b>suhtee/n</b>	<b>suhte/i/ssa</b>	<b>suhtee/ni</b>
<b>kone</b>	machine	<b>kone/tta</b>	<b>konee/n</b>	<b>kone/i/ssa</b>	<b>konee/ni</b>
<b>+tarve</b>	need	<b>+tarve/tta</b>	<b>tarpee/n</b>	<b>tarpe/i/ssa</b>	<b>tarpee/ni</b>
<b>+sade</b>	rain	<b>+sade/tta</b>	<b>satee/n</b>	<b>sate/i/ssa</b>	<b>satee/ni</b>
<b>+ote</b>	grasp	<b>+ote/tta</b>	<b>ottee/n</b>	<b>otte/i/ssa</b>	<b>ottee/ni</b>
<b>+liikenne</b>	traffic	<b>+liikenne/ttä</b>	<b>liikentee/n</b>	<b>liikente/i/ssä</b>	<b>liikentee/ni</b>

*Strong grade*

<b>liikkee/n</b>	of the movement
<b>liikkee/t</b>	movements
<b>liikkee/ssä</b>	in the movement
<b>liikke/i/ssä</b>	in the movements

*Weak grade*

<b>+liike</b>	movement
	( <i>nom. sing.</i> )
<b>+liike/ttä</b>	movement
	( <i>part. sing.</i> )

*Strong grade*

<b>liikkee/stä</b>	out of the movement
<b>liikke/i/stä</b>	out of the movements
<b>liikkee/mme</b>	our movement
<b>liikkee/nne</b>	your movement

*Weak grade*

Almost all nominals with a basic form in **-e** are declined in this way. For exceptions, see the end of §18.2.

## §20 NOMINALS WITH A BASIC FORM ENDING IN A CONSONANT

The third nominal stem type consists of nominals with a basic form ending in a consonant. Several sub-groups need to be distinguished (§20.1–8), but they all have the following features in common.

The inflectional stem often ends in the vowel **-e**, and the final consonant of the basic form alternates with other sounds.

The partitive singular is generally formed with the ending **-ta ~ -tä**, which is attached directly to the basic form (cf. §19).

Consonant gradation affects the basic form and the partitive singular.

The final vowel of the inflectional stem (usually **-e**) changes before the plural **-i-**.

### §20.1 IHMINEN NOMINALS

The most important sub-group of these nominals is made up of those ending in **-nen**, the type **ihminen** ‘person’.

In **ihminen** nominals **-nen** changes to **-se-** in the inflectional stem; the partitive singular is formed from the inflectional stem with the final **-e** dropped.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>			
		<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Partitive</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>ihminen</b>	person	<b>ihmise/n</b>	<b>ihmis/tä</b>	<b>ihmis/i/ssä</b>	<b>ihmise/ni</b>
<b>nainen</b>	woman	<b>naise/n</b>	<b>nais/ta</b>	<b>nais/i/ssa</b>	<b>naise/ni</b>
<b>yleinen</b>	general	<b>yleise/n</b>	<b>yleis/tä</b>	<b>yleis/i/ssä</b>	–
<b>hevonen</b>	horse	<b>hevo<del>s</del>/n</b>	<b>hevos/ta</b>	<b>hevos/i/ssa</b>	<b>hevo<del>s</del>/ni</b>
<b>punainen</b>	red	<b>punaise/n</b>	<b>punais/ta</b>	<b>punais/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>toinen</b>	another	<b>toise/n</b>	<b>tois/ta</b>	<b>tois/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>jokainen</b>	every	<b>jokaise/n</b>	<b>jokais/ta</b>	–	–

## §20.2 AJATUS NOMINALS

There are two groups of nominals with a basic form ending in a short vowel+s. The most common of these is the type **ajatus** ‘thought’ (cf. §20.3).

In **ajatus** nominals **-s** changes to **-kse-** in the inflectional stem; the partitive singular is formed directly from the basic form.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
			<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>ajatus</b>	thought	<b>ajatus/ta</b>	<b>ajatukse/n</b>	<b>ajatuks/i/ssa</b>	<b>ajatukse/ni</b>
<b>kysymys</b>	question	<b>kysymys/tä</b>	<b>kysymykse/n</b>	<b>kysymy<del>k</del>s/i/ssä</b>	<b>kysymykse/ni</b>
<b>vastaus</b>	answer	<b>vastaus/ta</b>	<b>vastaukse/n</b>	<b>vastauks/i/ssa</b>	<b>vastaukse/ni</b>
<b>teos</b>	work	<b>teos/ta</b>	<b>teokse/n</b>	<b>teoks/i/ssa</b>	<b>teokse/ni</b>
<b>rakennus</b>	building	<b>rakennus/ta</b>	<b>rakennukse/n</b>	<b>rakennuks/i/ssa</b>	<b>rakennukse/ni</b>
<b>hallitus</b>	government	<b>hallitus/ta</b>	<b>hallitukse/n</b>	<b>hallituks/i/ssa</b>	<b>hallitukse/ni</b>
<b>päätös</b>	decision	<b>päätös/tä</b>	<b>päätökse/n</b>	<b>päätöks/i/ssä</b>	<b>päätökse/ni</b>

## §20.3 TAIVAS NOMINALS

In nominals like **taivas** ‘heaven’ the **-s** of the basic form alternates with a vowel identical with the preceding vowel.

In **taivas** nominals **-s** changes in the inflectional stem to a vowel identical with the preceding vowel; the partitive singular is formed directly from the basic form.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
			<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>taiva<u>s</u></b>	heaven	<b>taiva<u>s</u>/ta</b>	<b>taivaa<u>n</u></b>	<b>taiva/i/ssa</b>	<b>taivaa<u>ni</u></b>
<b>valmi<u>s</u></b>	ready	<b>valmi<u>s</u>/ta</b>	<b>valmi<u>i</u>/n</b>	<b>valmi/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>+rika<u>s</u></b>	rich	<b>+rika<u>s</u>/ta</b>	<b>rikkaa<u>n</u></b>	<b>rikka/i/ssa</b>	–
<b>oppila<u>s</u></b>	pupil	<b>oppila<u>s</u>/ta</b>	<b>oppilaa<u>n</u></b>	<b>oppila/i/ssa</b>	<b>oppilaa<u>ni</u></b>
<b>+tehd<u>a</u>s</b>	factory	<b>+tehd<u>a</u>s/ta</b>	<b>tehtaa<u>n</u></b>	<b>tehta/i/ssa</b>	<b>tehtaa<u>ni</u></b>
<b>+porra<u>s</u></b>	step	<b>+porra<u>s</u>/ta</b>	<b>porta<u>a</u>/n</b>	<b>porta/i/ssa</b>	<b>porta<u>a</u>/ni</b>
<b>+kirka<u>s</u></b>	bright	<b>+kirka<u>s</u>/ta</b>	<b>kirkkaa<u>n</u></b>	<b>kirikka/i/ssa</b>	–
<i>Strong grade</i>			<i>Weak grade</i>		
<b>teht<u>a</u>/n</b>		of the factory	<b>+tehd<u>a</u>s</b>		factory
<b>teht<u>a</u>/t</b>		factories			( <i>nom. sing.</i> )
<b>teht<u>a</u>/ssa</b>		in the factory	<b>+tehd<u>a</u>s/ta</b>		factory
<b>teht<u>a</u>/i/ssa</b>		in the factories			( <i>part. sing.</i> )
<b>teht<u>a</u>/sta</b>		out of the factory			
<b>teht<u>a</u>/i/sta</b>		out of the factories			
<b>teht<u>a</u>/mme</b>		our factory			
<b>teht<u>a</u>/nne</b>		your factory			

## §20.4 HYVYYS NOMINALS

The third group of nominals with a basic form ending in **-s** is the type **hyvyys** ‘goodness’. This includes all nouns with a final **-s** preceded by a long vowel, and many nouns with two different vowels preceding the final **-s**. All the words in this group are derived forms, cf. **hyvä** ‘good’—**hyv/yys** ‘goodness’, **kaunis** ‘beautiful’—**kaune/us** ‘beauty’, **osa** ‘part’—**os/uus** ‘share’. They have several special sound alternations.

In **hyvyys** nominals **-s** changes to **-te-** in the inflectional stem of the singular; before the plural **-i**, **-s** changes to **-ks-**; the partitive singular is formed from the inflectional stem and **-e-** is dropped.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
			<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>hyvy<u>y</u>s</b>	goodness	<b>hyvyt/<u>t</u>ä</b>	<b>+hyvyd<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>hyvyk<u>s</u>/i/ä</b>	<b>hyvyte/<u>n</u>i</b>
<b>korkeu<u>s</u></b>	height	<b>korkeut/<u>t</u>a</b>	<b>+korkeud<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>korkeuk<u>s</u>/i/a</b>	<b>korkeute/<u>n</u>i</b>
<b>rakka<u>s</u></b>	love	<b>rakkaut/<u>t</u>a</b>	<b>+rakkaud<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>rakkauk<u>s</u>/i/ssa</b>	<b>rakkaute/<u>n</u>i</b>
<b>totuu<u>s</u></b>	truth	<b>totuut/<u>t</u>a</b>	<b>+totuud<u>e</u>/n</b>	<b>totuuk<u>s</u>/i/ssa</b>	<b>totuute/<u>n</u>i</b>

<i>Strong grade</i>		<i>Weak grade</i>	
<b>totuutee/n</b>	into truth	<b>+totuude/n</b>	of truth
<b>totuute/na</b>	as truth	<b>+totuude/ssa</b>	in truth
<b>totuute/mme</b>	our truth	<b>+totuude/sta</b>	out of truth
		<b>+totuude/lla</b>	with truth

## §20.5 AVAIN NOMINALS

Most of the words inflected like **avain** ‘key’ are derived with the ending **-in** (cf. §93.1). The stem alternates between **-in-** and **-ime-**, and the partitive singular is made from the basic form.

		<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>			
<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>avain</b>	key	<b>avain/ta</b>	<b>avai<u>me</u>/n</b>	<b>avaim/i/ssa</b>	<b>avai<u>me</u>/ni</b>
<b>puhelin</b>	telephone	<b>puhelin/ta</b>	<b>puheli<u>me</u>/n</b>	<b>puhelim/i/ssa</b>	<b>puheli<u>me</u>/ni</b>
<b>kirjain</b>	letter	<b>kirjain/ta</b>	<b>kirjai<u>me</u>/n</b>	<b>kirjaim/i/ssa</b>	<b>kirjai<u>me</u>/ni</b>

## §20.6 TYÖTÖN NOMINALS

Derived nominals of the type **työ/tön** ‘unemployed’ are very common. The partitive singular is made from the basic form. The other inflected forms are based on a stem where **-ton** ~ **-tön** alternates with **-ttoma-** ~ **-ttömä-**. In the plural **-a/-ä-** is dropped (§16.7–8).

			<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>	
<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<b>työ/tön</b>	unemployed	<b>työ/tön/tä</b>	<b>työ/ttömä/n</b>	<b>työ/ttöm/i/ssä</b>
<b>onne/ton</b>	unhappy	<b>onne/ton/ta</b>	<b>onne/ttoma/n</b>	<b>onne/ttom/i/ssa</b>
<b>tie/tön</b>	without roads	<b>tie/tön/tä</b>	<b>tie/ttömä/n</b>	<b>tie/ttöm/i/ssä</b>

## §20.7 ASKEL NOMINALS

There are a few dozen nominals ending in a consonant which form another small sub-group. The two final sounds of the basic form are generally **-el** or **-en**. The partitive singular is made from the basic form. The inflectional stem adds an **-e-** (which is dropped before the plural **-i-**).



<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
			<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural suffix</i>	<i>Possessive suffix</i>
<b>askel</b>	step	<b>askel/ta</b>	<b>askele/n</b>	<b>askel/i/ssa</b>	<b>askele/ni</b>
<b>sävel</b>	tune	<b>sävel/tä</b>	<b>sävele/n</b>	<b>sävel/i/ssä</b>	<b>sävele/ni</b>
<b>jäsen</b>	member	<b>jäsen/tä</b>	<b>jäsene/n</b>	<b>jäsen/i/ssä</b>	<b>jäsene/ni</b>

## §20.8 LYHYT NOMINALS

There are a few nominals ending in **-ut** or **-yt**, where in the inflectional stem the **-t** changes to **-e-**, which is then dropped before the plural **-i-**. The group includes **kevyt** ‘light’, **lyhyt** ‘short’, **ohut** ‘thin’, **olut** ‘beer’. The nouns **mies** ‘man’ and **kevät** ‘spring’ also have unusual declensions.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Inflectional stem followed by:</i>		
			<i>Case (except part. sing.)</i>	<i>Plural suffix</i>	<i>Possessive</i>
<b>lyhyt</b>	short	<b>lyhyt/tä</b>	<b>lyhye/n</b>	<b>lyhy/i/ssä</b>	–
<b>olut</b>	beer	<b>olut/ta</b>	<b>olue/n</b>	<b>olu(e)i/ssa</b>	<b>olue/ni</b>
<b>mies</b>	man	<b>mies/tä</b>	<b>miehe/n</b>	<b>mieh/i/ssä</b>	<b>miehe/ni</b>
<b>kevät</b>	spring	<b>kevät/tä</b>	<b>kevää/n</b>	<b>kevä/i/ssä</b>	<b>kevää/ni</b>

New loan words ending in a final consonant form their inflectional stem by adding the vowel **i**, which changes to **e** before the plural **-i-** (§16.6). Cf. **stadion** ‘stadium’: **stadioni/n**, **stadioni/a**, **stadione/i/ta**. Loan words with a final **-s**, however, generally decline like **ajatus** nominals (§20.2), e.g. **anis** ‘aniseed’: **anikse/n**, **anikse/ssa**, **anis/ta** (part. sing.).

# 6 THE CONJUGATION OF VERBS

- *General*
- *Infinitive endings*
- *Inflectional stems*

## §21 GENERAL

Verb forms are built up like nominals by adding endings to stems. Verbs differ from nominals in that they do not have an independent basic form as such to which inflectional endings could be attached, as is the case with nominals: cf. the basic form **auto** 'car' and the inflected forms **auto/n**, **auto/ssa**, **auto/i/hin**.

The dictionary form of Finnish verbs, i.e. the shorter form of the first infinitive, already has an ending, e.g. **osta/a** '(to) buy', **vastat/a** '(to) answer', **juo/da** '(to) drink'. Before other verb forms can be made one must first take off the infinitive ending from the stem, to which other endings are then added, cf. **osta/a** '(to) buy' : **osta/isi/n** 'I would buy', **osta/nut** 'bought'.

Some verbs have more than one stem, in which case one is formed from the other, e.g. **vastat/a** '(to) answer' : **vastaa/n** 'I answer' and **tul/la** '(to) come' : **tule/n** 'I come'. Consonant gradation (§15) and vowel changes before **-i-** (§16) affect verbs in much the same way as nominals, e.g. **anta/a** '(to) give' : **anna/n** 'I give' (consonant gradation) : **anno/i/n** 'I gave' (vowel change, and also consonant gradation).

The stems needed for the conjugation of verbs are the infinitive stem, which is arrived at after the infinitive endings are detached according to the rules given in §22, and the inflectional stem, which can be formed from the infinitive stem and to which e.g. the personal endings are added (§23). The rules for the formation of the inflectional stem are given in §23.

The following examples illustrate the use of the first infinitive (cf. also §74).

**Haluan juo/da olutta.**

**Tahtoisitko syö/dä?**

**Yritän sano/a asiat selvästi.**

**Minun täytyy lähte/ä.**

**Saako täällä laula/a?**

I want to *drink* some beer.

Would you like to *eat*?

I try to *say* the things clearly.

I must *leave*.

Can one *sing* here?

**Nyt sinun pitää lopetta/a.**  
**Tässä on mukava istu/a.**  
**Olisi kiva men/nä ulos.**

Now you must *stop*.  
 It is nice to *sit* here.  
 It would be nice to *go* out.

## §22 INFINITIVE ENDINGS

The first infinitive has four endings, (1) **-a ~ -ä**, (2) **-da ~ -dä**, (3) **-ta ~ -tä**, and (4) **-la ~ -lä**, **-ra ~ -rä**, **-na ~ -nä**. The most common one is **-a ~ -ä**. All the infinitive endings are preceded by the infinitive stem.

The ending **-a ~ -ä** occurs when the infinitive stem ends in a short vowel.

<b>anta/a</b>	give	<b>kysy/ä</b>	ask
<b>alka/a</b>	begin	<b>lähte/ä</b>	leave
<b>katso/a</b>	look	<b>pitä/ä</b>	hold
<b>puhu/a</b>	talk	<b>tietä/ä</b>	know

The ending **-a ~ -ä** also occurs when the infinitive stem ends in a short vowel followed by **t** (usually **-at/a**, **-ät/ä**).

<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	<b>herät/ä</b>	awake
<b>halut/a</b>	want	<b>hypät/ä</b>	jump
<b>korjat/a</b>	repair	<b>määrät/ä</b>	order
<b>vastat/a</b>	answer	<b>kerät/ä</b>	collect

The ending **-da ~ -dä** occurs when the infinitive stem ends in a long vowel or a diphthong.

<b>saa/da</b>	get	<b>jää/dä</b>	remain
<b>tuo/da</b>	bring	<b>vie/dä</b>	take
<b>voi/da</b>	be able	<b>syö/dä</b>	eat
<b>luennoi/da</b>	lecture	<b>pysäköi/dä</b>	park

The ending **-ta ~ -tä** occurs when the infinitive stem ends in **-s**.

<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	<b>pääs/tä</b>	be allowed
<b>juos/ta</b>	run	<b>tönäis/tä</b>	shove
<b>mumis/ta</b>	mumble	<b>pes/tä</b>	wash
<b>valais/ta</b>	light	<b>vilis/tä</b>	swarm

The endings **-la ~ -lä, -na ~ -nä, -ra ~ -rä** occur when the infinitive stem ends in an identical consonant (**-l, -n, -r**).

<b>tul/la</b>	come	<b>vietel/lä</b>	entice
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>niel/lä</b>	swallow
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	<b>hymyi/lä</b>	smile
<b>pan/na</b>	put	<b>men/nä</b>	go
<b>pur/ra</b>	bite		

The most important types are those exemplified by **anta/a** and **huomat/a**. **Saa/da** verbs are also important. There are not many verbs with infinitives ending in **-na ~ -nä** and **-ra ~ -rä**.

In **anta/a** and **saa/da** verbs all inflected forms are based on the infinitive stem. But also in the other verb groups at least some forms are based on this stem. The following rule states which inflected forms of all verbs are made from the infinitive stem.

With all verbs the infinitive stem is used to form:

- 1 the past participle (§61)
- 2 most imperative forms (§66)
- 3 potential forms (§67)
- 4 passive forms (§69–72)
- 5 the second infinitive (§76)

## §23 INFLECTIONAL STEMS

This section shows how the five groups of verbs introduced above form their inflectional stems (§23.1–4); it concludes with a few special cases (§23.5–6). All forms except those mentioned in the above rule are made from the inflectional stem. For each verb, two examples of the inflectional stem are given in order to illustrate the effect of consonant gradation (e.g. **anta/a** ‘(to) give’ : **anna/n** ‘I give’).

### §23.1 ANTA/A VERBS

**Anta/a** verbs, where the infinitive ending occurs after a short vowel, do not have a separate inflectional stem; other endings are added directly to the infinitive stem. The + symbol indicates consonant gradation.

**Anta/a** verbs have only an infinitive stem.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>osta/a</b>	buy	<b>osta/n</b> I buy	<b>osta/a</b> he buys
<b>alka/a</b>	begin	<b>+ala/n</b>	<b>alka/a</b>
<b>ymmärtä/ä</b>	understand	<b>+ymmärrä/n</b>	<b>ymmärtä/ä</b>
<b>etsi/ä</b>	look for	<b>etsi/n</b>	<b>etsi/i</b>
<b>luke/a</b>	read	<b>+lue/n</b>	<b>luke/e</b>
<b>neuvo/a</b>	advise	<b>neuvo/n</b>	<b>neuvo/o</b>
<b>unohta/a</b>	forget	<b>+unohda/n</b>	<b>unohta/a</b>
<b>herättä/ä</b>	wake up	<b>+herätä/n</b>	<b>herättä/ä</b>
<b>kysy/ä</b>	ask	<b>kysy/n</b>	<b>kysy/y</b>

### §23.2 HUOMAT/A VERBS

**Huomat/a** verbs, which generally end in **-at/a**, **-ät/ä**, are a very important group ('contracted verbs'). The relation here between the infinitive stem and the inflectional stem is a complex one. The **-t-** of the infinitive alternates with **-a/-ä-** and consonant gradation applies to the infinitive, whereas there is no alternation in the inflectional stem (§15.4).

In **huomat/a** verbs the **-t-** of the infinitive stem changes to **-a-** or **-ä-** according to vowel harmony; consonant gradation affects the infinitive stem.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	<b>huoma<u>a</u>/n</b> I notice	<b>huoma<u>a</u></b> he notices
<b>osat/a</b>	know how	<b>osaa/n</b>	<b>osaa</b>
<b>+hypät/ä</b>	jump	<b>hyppää/n</b>	<b>hyppää</b>
<b>seurat/a</b>	follow	<b>seuraa/n</b>	<b>seuraa</b>
<b>tarjot/a</b>	offer	<b>tarjoa/n</b>	<b>tarjoa/a</b>
<b>halut/a</b>	want	<b>halua/n</b>	<b>halua/a</b>
<b>+pelät/ä</b>	fear	<b>pelkää/n</b>	<b>pelkää</b>
<b>määrät/ä</b>	order	<b>määrää/n</b>	<b>määrää</b>
<b>+veikat/a</b>	bet	<b>veikkaa/n</b>	<b>veikkaa</b>

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>+hakat/a</b>	hew	<b>hakkaa/n</b>	<b>hakkaa</b>
<b>+maat/a</b>	lie	<b>makaa/n</b>	<b>makaa</b>
<b>+tavat/a</b>	meet	<b>tapaa/n</b>	<b>tapaa</b>
<b>+kadot/a</b>	disappear	<b>katoa/n</b>	<b>katoa/a</b>
<b>varat/a</b>	reserve	<b>varaa/n</b>	<b>varaa</b>

### §23.3 SAA/DA VERBS

The third group, **saa/da** verbs, where the infinitive ending occurs after a long vowel or a diphthong, is similar to the **anta/a** group in that these verbs too have only an infinitive stem.

**Saa/da** verbs have only an infinitive stem.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>saa/da</b>	get	<b>saa/n</b> I get	<b>saa</b> he gets
<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	<b>myy/n</b>	<b>myy</b>
<b>juo/da</b>	drink	<b>juo/n</b>	<b>juo</b>
<b>voi/da</b>	be able	<b>voi/n</b>	<b>voi</b>
<b>luennoi/da</b>	lecture	<b>luennoi/n</b>	<b>luennoi</b>
<b>kanavoi/da</b>	direct	<b>kanavoi/n</b>	<b>kanavoi</b>
<b>pysäköi/dä</b>	park	<b>pysäköi/n</b>	<b>pysäköi</b>
<b>teh/dä</b>	do	<b>+tee/n</b>	<b>teke/e</b>
<b>näh/dä</b>	see	<b>+näe/n</b>	<b>näke/e</b>

The common verbs **teh/dä** ‘do’ and **näh/dä** ‘see’ are exceptional, since they have an inflectional stem ending in **-ke-**, with **-k** alternating with the **-h-** of the infinitive stem.

### §23.4 NOUS/TA AND TUL/LA VERBS

These two groups form their inflectional stem by adding **-e-** to the infinitive.

The inflectional stem of **nous/ta** and **tul/la** verbs is formed by adding **-e-** to the infinitive stem.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	<b>nouse/n</b> I rise	<b>nouse/e</b> he rises
<b>pes/tä</b>	wash	<b>pese/n</b>	<b>pese/e</b>

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>tul/la</b>	come	<b>tule/n</b>	<b>tule/e</b>
<b>men/nä</b>	go	<b>mene/n</b>	<b>mene/e</b>
<b>hymyi/lä</b>	smile	<b>hymyile/n</b>	<b>hymyile/e</b>
<b>+ajatel/la</b>	think	<b>ajattele/n</b>	<b>ajattele/e</b>
<b>kiistel/lä</b>	dispute	<b>kiistele/n</b>	<b>kiistele/e</b>
<b>+työskennel/lä</b>	work	<b>työskentele/n</b>	<b>työskentele/e</b>
<b>julkais/ta</b>	publish	<b>julkaise/n</b>	<b>julkaise/e</b>

In these verbs too, consonant gradation occurs in the infinitive stem (§15.4), e.g. **ajatel/la** ‘(to) think’ : **ajattele/n** ‘I think’.

### §23.5 TARVIT/A VERBS

Infinitives ending in **-it/a**, **-it/ä**, e.g. **tarvit/a** ‘need’, are similar to **huomat/a** verbs (§23.2), but their inflectional stem is formed differently:

The inflectional stem of **tarvit/a** verbs is formed by adding **-se-** to the infinitive stem.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>tarvit/a</b>	need	<b>tarvitse/n</b> I need	<b>tarvitse/e</b> he needs
<b>ansait/a</b>	earn	<b>ansaitse/n</b>	<b>ansaitse/e</b>
<b>hallit/a</b>	rule	<b>hallitse/n</b>	<b>hallitse/e</b>
<b>harkit/a</b>	consider	<b>harkitse/n</b>	<b>harkitse/e</b>
<b>häirit/ä</b>	disturb	<b>häiritse/n</b>	<b>häiritse/e</b>

### §23.6 LÄMMET/Ä VERBS

Infinitives ending in **-et/a**, **-et/ä** like **lämmet/ä** ‘get warm’ also form their inflectional stem in a different way (cf. §23.2).

In **lämmet/ä** verbs the **-t-** of the infinitive stem changes to **-ne-** in the inflectional stem.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First person sing.</i>	<i>Third person sing.</i>
<b>+lämmet/ä</b>	get warm	<b>lämpene/n</b> I get warm	<b>lämpene/e</b> he gets warm
<b>vanhet/a</b>	grow old	<b>vanhene/n</b>	<b>vanhene/e</b>
<b>+paet/a</b>	flee	<b>pakene/n</b>	<b>pakene/e</b>
<b>+kalvet/a</b>	turn pale	<b>kalpene/n</b>	<b>kalpene/e</b>
<b>laajet/a</b>	grow wider	<b>laajene/n</b>	<b>laajene/e</b>

# 7 BASIC SENTENCE STRUCTURE

- *Present tense personal endings*
- *The nominative (basic form of nominals)*
- *Singular and plural*
- *The verb **olla** ‘(to) be’*
- *‘To have’ in Finnish*
- *Negative sentences*
- *Questions and answers*
- *Concord of attributes*

## §24 PRESENT TENSE PERSONAL ENDINGS

Finnish has three grammatical persons, each occurring in the singular and the plural. They correspond to the following pronouns.

<b>minä</b>	I	<b>me</b>	we
<b>sinä</b>	you (sing.)	<b>te</b>	you (pl.)
<b>hän; se</b>	he, she; it	<b>he, ne</b>	they

The third person singular covers all singular nominals except the pronouns **minä** and **sinä**, and the third person plural covers all plural nominals except the pronouns **me** and **te**. Finite verb forms (§13) show concord of person with the grammatical subject. The persons have their own endings, which are added to the verb stem (the third person singular often has no ending).

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>First person</i>	<b>-n</b>	<b>-mme</b>
<i>Second person</i>	<b>-t</b>	<b>-tte</b>
<i>Third person</i>	(cf. below)	<b>-vat ~ -vät</b>

These endings are attached to the inflectional stem (§23) after any tense and mood endings (§13). In the third person singular of the present indicative the final vowel of the stem is lengthened.

In the third person singular of the present indicative the short vowel following the final consonant or syllable boundary of the inflectional stem is lengthened.



	<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>
<i>First person</i>	<b>(minä) osta/n</b> I buy		<b>(me) osta/mme</b> we buy
	<b>(minä) sano/n</b> I say		<b>(me) sano/mme</b> we say
	<b>(minä) saa/n</b> I buy		<b>(me) saa/mme</b> we get
	<b>(minä) syö/n</b> I eat		<b>(me) syö/mme</b> we eat
	<b>(minä) tule/n</b> I come		<b>(me) tule/mme</b> we come
<i>Second person</i>	<b>(sinä) osta/t</b> you buy		<b>(te) osta/tte</b> you buy
	<b>(sinä) sano/t</b> you say		<b>(te) sano/tte</b> you say
	<b>(sinä) saa/t</b> you get		<b>(te) saa/tte</b> you get
	<b>(sinä) syö/t</b> you eat		<b>(te) syö/tte</b> you eat
	<b>(sinä) tule/t</b> you come		<b>(te) tule/tte</b> you come
<i>Third person</i>	<b>hän osta/a</b> he/she buys		<b>he osta/vat</b> they buy
	<b>Pekka sano/o</b> Pekka says		<b>he sano/vat</b> they say
	<b>tyttö saa</b> the girl gets		<b>tytöt saa/vat</b> the girls get
	<b>mies syö</b> the man eats		<b>miehet syö/vät</b> the men eat
	<b>auto tule/e</b> the car comes		<b>autot tule/vat</b> the cars come

A long vowel, and the second vowel of a diphthong, are not lengthened in the third person singular, cf. **Kalle saa** ‘Kalle gets’; **Kalle syö** ‘Kalle eats’. Note words such as **halua/a** ‘wants’, **kohoa/a** ‘rises’, where vowel lengthening occurs after a syllable boundary (cf. §9). The independent subject words of the third person cannot usually be omitted, but subject pronouns in the first and second persons often are, in which case the personal ending of the verb is all that indicates the person (shown in brackets above).

First and second person subject pronouns (**minä**, **sinä**, **me**, **te**) are often omitted.

The second person plural ending **-tte** is also used as a polite form addressed to a single person. The form **osta/tte** can thus mean ‘you (pl.) buy’ or ‘you (sing., polite) buy’.

Consonant gradation applies in the first and second persons of many verbs on condition that the ending is not preceded by a long vowel (§15.2, §15.4). Examples follow of **anta/a** ‘give’, **otta/a** ‘take’ and **vetä/ä** ‘pull’.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>First person</i>	<b>anna/n</b>	<b>ota/n</b>
	<b>vedä/n</b>	<b>anna/mme</b>
	<b>ota/mme</b>	<b>vedä/mme</b>
<i>Second person</i>	<b>anna/t</b>	<b>anna/tte</b>

	<b>ota/t</b>	<b>vedä/t</b>
	<b>ota/tte</b>	<b>vedä/tte</b>
<i>Third person</i>	<b>anta/a</b>	<b>otta/a</b>
	<b>vetä/ä</b>	<b>anta/vat</b>
	<b>otta/vat</b>	<b>vetä/vät</b>

In these forms there is no consonant gradation in **huomat/a** verbs on account of the long vowel, cf. **hyppää/n** 'I jump', **hyppää/t** 'you jump', **hän hyppää** 'he/she jumps'. The following examples illustrate the personal endings of the most important verb types (cf. §23).

<b>etsi/ä</b>	<i>look for</i>	<b>luke/a</b>	<i>read</i>	<b>lentä/ä</b>	<i>fly</i>
etsi/n	etsi/mme	lue/n	lue/mme	lennä/n	lennä/mme
etsi/t	etsi/tte	lue/t	lue/tte	lennä/t	lennä/tte
etsi/i	etsi/vät	luke/e	luke/vat	lentä/ä	lentä/vät
<b>osaa/a</b>	<i>know how</i>	<b>maata/a</b>	<i>lie</i>	<b>haluta/a</b>	<i>want</i>
osaa/n	osaa/mme	makaa/n	makaa/mme	halua/n	halua/mme
osaa/t	osaa/tte	makaa/t	makaa/tte	halua/t	halua/tte
osaa	osaa/vat	makaa	makaa/vat	halua/a	halua/vat
<b>saa/da</b>	<i>get</i>	<b>juo/da</b>	<i>drink</i>	<b>myy/dä</b>	<i>sell</i>
saa/n	saa/mme	juo/n	juo/mme	myy/n	myy/mme
saa/t	saa/tte	juo/t	juo/tte	myy/t	myy/tte
saa	saa/vat	juo	juo/vat	myy	myy/vät
<b>nouse/ta</b>	<i>rise</i>	<b>tulla</b>	<i>come</i>	<b>men/nä</b>	<i>go</i>
nouse/n	nouse/mme	tule/n	tule/mme	mene/n	mene/mme
nouse/t	nouse/tte	tule/t	tule/tte	mene/t	mene/tte
nouse/e	nouse/vat	tule/e	tule/vat	mene/e	mene/vät
<b>tarvit/a</b>	<i>need</i>	<b>ansait/a</b>	<i>earn</i>	<b>häirit/ä</b>	<i>disturb</i>
tarvitse/n	tarvitse/mme	ansaitse/n	ansaitse/mme	häiritse/n	häiritse/mme
tarvitse/t	tarvitse/tte	ansaitse/t	ansaitse/tte	häiritse/t	häiritse/tte
tarvitse/e	tarvitse/vat	ansaitse/e	ansaitse/vat	häiritse/e	häiritse/vät

## §25 THE NOMINATIVE (BASIC FORM OF NOMINALS)

The nominative is the basis upon which the Finnish case system is built. The nominative is the primary form of nominals in dictionaries, and it is also the most common case of most nominal words. The functions of the nominative are seen most clearly when it is compared with the partitive, the second basic case in the system. The partitive often expresses an indefinite, non-limited quantity of something, allowing the possibility that there may exist more of it. The nominative, on the other hand, expresses either a concrete or abstract whole or a definite, limited, total quantity.

## §25.1 NOMINATIVE ENDINGS

The nominative has

- 1 no ending in the singular
- 2 the ending **-t** in the plural

### *Nominative singular*

<b>auto</b>	car
<b>maa</b>	country
<b>talo</b>	house
<b>hylly</b>	shelf
<b>nainen</b>	woman
<b>kivi</b>	stone
<b>käsi</b>	hand

### *Nominative plural*

<b>auto/t</b>	the cars
<b>maa/t</b>	the countries
<b>talo/t</b>	the houses
<b>hylly/t</b>	the shelves
<b>naise/t</b>	the women (cf. §20.1)
<b>kive/t</b>	the stones (cf. §18.2)
<b>käde/t</b>	the hands (cf. §18.4)

There are no articles in Finnish corresponding to the way the difference between definite and indefinite meaning is expressed e.g. in English (the car, a car). Whether the Finnish expression **auto** is to be interpreted as definite or indefinite is often indicated by the word order of the sentence in question (§25.3). The nominative plural, e.g. **auto/t**, almost always has the meaning 'definite'.

## §25.2 NON-DIVISIBLE AND DIVISIBLE NOUNS

In order to explain the use of the nominative we also need to make a distinction with respect to the partitive. A noun is *non-divisible* (countable) if it refers to a more or less concrete entity that cannot be divided into smaller parts in such a way that the parts share the quality of the whole. Non-divisible nouns can be counted (one *x*, two *x*'s, etc.). Examples: **auto** 'car', **talo** 'house', **hylly** 'shelf', **nainen** 'woman', **käsi** 'hand', **sielu** 'soul'. (In English these nouns would be classified as singular count nouns.)

A noun is *divisible* (non-countable) if it refers to a concrete mass or an abstract entity that can be divided into parts in such a way that the parts share the quality of the whole. Examples: **kahvi** 'coffee', **maito** 'milk', **rauta** 'iron', **kulta** 'gold', **olut** 'beer', **vesi** 'water', **vahvuus** 'strength', **rakkaus** 'love'. Divisible nouns cannot normally be counted.

## §25.3 USE OF THE NOMINATIVE

The use of the nominative depends on three factors: whether the noun is divisible or non-divisible, whether a divisible word is definite or indefinite, and sometimes whether the noun is singular or plural. Four rules follow below.

- (1) Singular, non-divisible subject nouns appear in the nominative and express
- (a) definite meaning at the beginning of the sentence
  - (b) indefinite meaning at the end of the sentence.

**Auto on kadulla.**  
**Kadulla on auto.**

*The car is in the street.*  
There is *a car* in the street.

**Nainen on talossa.**  
**Talossa on nainen.**

*The woman is in the house.*  
There is *a woman* in the house.

**Kirja ilmestyi.**  
**Ilmestyi kirja.**

*The book was published.*  
*A book* was published.

**Pullo on kaapissa.**  
**Kaapissa on pullo.**

*The bottle is in the cupboard.*  
There is *a bottle* in the cupboard.

Nouns at the beginning of a sentence are generally interpreted as definite, i.e. to be known in the sense that the hearer (reader) knows what they refer to.

Sentences where both subject and object are non-divisible are often ambiguous as regards definiteness:

**Mies osti kirjan.**                      *A/the man bought a/the book.*  
**Nainen hankki auton.**                *A/the woman got a/the car.*

If the word order is inverted, with the object at the beginning and the subject at the end, the object is interpreted as definite (known) and the subject as indefinite (new):

**Kirjan osti mies.**                      *A man bought the book./*  
*The book was bought by a man.*

Singular non-divisible predicate nouns (complements) are always in the nominative.

**Pekka on mies.**                      Pekka is *a man*.  
**Tuula on nainen.**                    Tuula is *a woman*.  
**Tämä on pöytä.**                      This is *a table*.  
**Tuo on auto.**                          That is *a car*.  
**Auto tuo on!**                          That's a car! (with emphasis)  
**Paavo on opettaja.**                  Paavo is *a teacher*.

Singular predicative adjectives are also in the nominative if the subject is a non-divisible word.

**Auto on sininen.**                      The car is *blue*.

<b>Tuo vene on kallis.</b>	That boat is <i>expensive</i> .
<b>Kalle on pitkä.</b>	Kalle is <i>tall</i> .
<b>Ajatuksesi oli hyvä.</b>	Your idea was <i>good</i> .
<b>Kone on likainen.</b>	The machine is <i>dirty</i> .

(2) Non-divisible plural nouns with definite meaning take the ending **-t**.

<b>Auto/t ovat kadulla.</b>	<i>The cars</i> are in the street.
<b>Kadulla ovat auto/t.</b>	In the street are <i>the cars</i> !
<b>Miehe/t tulivat kotiin.</b>	<i>The men</i> came home.
<b>Kirja/t maksavat 10 mk.</b>	<i>The books</i> cost 10 marks.
<b>Ministeri/t lähtivät lomalle.</b>	<i>The ministers</i> went on holiday.
<b>Pekka osti kirja/t.</b>	Pekka bought <i>the books</i> .
<b>Leena näki laiva/t.</b>	Leena saw <i>the ships</i> .
<b>Syön nämä omena/t.</b>	I'll eat these <i>apples</i> .

(3) Divisible nouns with definite (total, limited) meaning are in the nominative singular.

<b>Ruoka maistuu hyvältä.</b>	<i>(The) food</i> tastes good.
<b>Kahvi on kupissa.</b>	<i>The coffee</i> is in the cup.
<b>Liha maksaa paljon.</b>	<i>(The) meat</i> is expensive.
<b>Aika loppuu.</b>	<i>(The) time</i> is up.
<b>Osta olut!</b> (cf. §37, §38)	Buy <i>the beer</i> !
<b>Kahvi juotiin.</b> (cf. §37, §38)	<i>The coffee</i> was drunk.
<b>Tämä on Pekan maito.</b>	This is Pekka's <i>milk</i> .
<b>Maito on valkoista.</b>	<i>(The) milk</i> is white.
<b>Ilma on kirkas.</b>	<i>The air</i> is clear.

(4) The subject is always in the nominative if  
 (a) the verb has an object  
 (b) the verb is **olla** '(to) be' and a complement follows.

<b>Poika potkii palloa.</b>	<i>A/the boy</i> kicks <i>a/the ball</i> . (4a)
<b>Pojat potkivat palloa.</b>	<i>(The) boys</i> kick <i>a/the ball</i> . (4a)
<b>Kahvi on hyvää.</b>	<i>(The) coffee</i> is good. (4b)
<b>Mikään ei ole mahdotonta.</b>	<i>Nothing</i> is impossible. (4b)

## §26 SINGULAR AND PLURAL

Nominals inflect for singular and plural. The singular always has no ending. The plural has two endings, **-t** and **-i-**. The ending **-t** occurs only in the nominative and accusative (§37, §38), and **-i-** in all other cases.

	<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
<i>Nominative</i>	<b>talo</b>	house	<b>talo/t</b>	the houses
<i>Genitive</i>	<b>talo/n</b>	of the house	<b>talo/j/en</b>	of the houses
<i>Partitive</i>	<b>talo/a</b>	house	<b>talo/j/a</b>	houses
<i>Inessive</i>	<b>talo/ssa</b>	in the house	<b>talo/i/ssa</b>	in the houses
<i>Elative</i>	<b>talo/sta</b>	out of the house	<b>talo/i/sta</b>	out of the houses
<i>Illative</i>	<b>talo/on</b>	into the house	<b>talo/i/hin</b>	into the houses
<i>Adessive</i>	<b>talo/lla</b>	on the house	<b>talo/i/lla</b>	on the houses
<i>Ablative</i>	<b>talo/lta</b>	off the house	<b>talo/i/lta</b>	off the houses
<i>Allative</i>	<b>talo/lle</b>	onto the house	<b>talo/i/lle</b>	onto the houses
<i>Essive</i>	<b>talo/na</b>	as a house	<b>talo/i/na</b>	as houses
<i>Translative</i>	<b>talo/ksi</b>	to a house	<b>talo/i/ksi</b>	to (become) houses

The plural **-i-** changes to **-j-** between two vowels.

This rule concerns the genitive plural and the partitive plural: **hylly/j/en** ‘of the shelves’, **hylly/j/ä** ‘shelves’, **pullo/j/en** ‘of the bottles’, **pullo/j/a** ‘bottles’, **tyttö/j/en** ‘of the girls’, **tyttö/j/ä** ‘girls’.

All plural forms are made from the inflectional stem (§18–20), and before the plural **-i-** the vowel changes apply (§16). The table below illustrates the formation of the plural.

<i>Nominative singular</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i>	(cf. §)	<i>Nominative plural</i>	<i>Inessive plural</i>	<i>Vowel change</i>
						(cf. §)
<b>pullo</b>	bottle	pullo/n	–	pullo/t	pullo/i/ssa	–
<b>katu</b>	street	kadu/n	–	kadu/t	kadu/i/ssa	–
<b>maa</b>	country	maa/n	–	maa/t	ma/i/ssa	16.2
<b>risti</b>	cross	risti/n	18.1	risti/t	riste/i/ssä	16.6
<b>kivi</b>	stone	kive/n	18.2	kive/t	kiv/i/ssä	16.5
<b>lehti</b>	newspaper	lehde/n	18.2	lehde/t	lehd/i/ssä	16.5
<b>meri</b>	sea	mere/n	18.3	mere/t	mer/i/ssä	16.5
<b>vesi</b>	water	vede/n	18.4	vede/t	ves/i/ssä	16.5; 18.4
<b>kone</b>	machine	konee/n	19	konee/t	kone/i/ssa	16.2
<b>liike</b>	movement	liikkee/n	19	liikkee/t	liikke/i/ssä	16.2
<b>työ</b>	work	työ/n	–	työ/t	tö/i/ssä	16.3
<b>hai</b>	shark	hai/n	–	hai/t	ha/i/ssa	16.4

<i>Nominative singular</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i>	(cf. §)	<i>Nominative plural</i>	<i>Inessive plural</i>	<i>Vowel change</i> (cf. §)
<b>seinä</b>	wall	seinä/n	–	seinä/ <u>t</u>	sein/ <u>i</u> /ssä	16.7
<b>vanha</b>	old	vanha/n	–	vanha/ <u>t</u>	vanho/ <u>i</u> /ssa	16.8
<b>tavara</b>	thing	tavara/n	–	tavara/ <u>t</u>	tavaro/ <u>i</u> /ssa	16.8
<b>koira</b>	dog	koira/n	–	koira/ <u>t</u>	koir/ <u>i</u> /ssa	16.8
<b>ihminen</b>	person	ihmi <u>se</u> /n	20.1	ihmise/ <u>t</u>	ihmis/ <u>i</u> /ssä	16.5
<b>vanhus</b>	old person	vanhuk <u>se</u> /n	20.2	vanhukse/ <u>t</u>	vanhuk <u>s</u> / <u>i</u> /ssa	16.5
<b>taivas</b>	heaven	taiva <u>a</u> /n	20.3	taivaa/ <u>t</u>	taiva/ <u>i</u> /ssa	16.2
<b>rikas</b>	rich	rikkaa <u>a</u> /n	20.3	rikkaa/ <u>t</u>	rikka/ <u>i</u> /ssa	16.2
<b>totuus</b>	truth	totuud <u>e</u> /n	20.4	totuude/ <u>t</u>	totuuk <u>s</u> / <u>i</u> /ssa	6.5; ks: 20.4
<b>avain</b>	key	avai <u>m</u> e/n	20.5	avaime/ <u>t</u>	avaim/ <u>i</u> /ssa	16.5
<b>työtön</b>	unemployed	työttöm <u>ä</u> /n	20.6	työttömä/ <u>t</u>	työttöm/ <u>i</u> /ssä	16.7
<b>jäsen</b>	member	jäsene <u>n</u> /n	20.7	jäsene/ <u>t</u>	jäsen/ <u>i</u> /ssä	16.5
<b>mies</b>	man	mie <u>h</u> e/n	20.8	miehe/ <u>t</u>	mieh/ <u>i</u> /ssä	16.5

There are many nouns which appear only in the plural even though they refer to a singular concept. Plural words of this kind include:

<i>Nominative plural</i>		<i>Inessive plural</i>
<b>kasvot</b>	face	<b>kasvoissa</b>
<b>housut</b>	trousers	<b>housuissa</b>
<b>sakset</b>	scissors	<b>saksissa</b>
<b>kärryt</b>	cart	<b>kärryissä</b>
<b>häät</b>	wedding	<b>häissä</b>
<b>tanssit</b>	dance	<b>tansseissa</b>
<b>arpajaiset</b>	lottery	<b>arpajaisissa</b>

## §27 THE VERB OLLA ‘(TO) BE’

The conjugation of the verb **olla** is exceptional in the third person. The inflectional stem is formed by adding **-e-** (§23.4).

<b>(minä) ole/n</b>	I am	<b>(me) ole/mme</b>	we are
<b>(sinä) ole/t</b>	you are	<b>(te) ole/tte</b>	you are
<b>hän on</b>	he/she is	<b>he o/vat</b>	they are

The ending **-e-** is dropped before the past tense ending **-i-** and also before the conditional **-isi-** (§16.5).

<b>(minä) ol/i/n</b>	I was	<b>(me) ol/i/mme</b>	we were
<b>(sinä) ol/i/t</b>	you were	<b>(te) ol/i/tte</b>	you were
<b>hän ol/i</b>	he/she was	<b>he ol/i/vat</b>	they were
<b>(minä) ol/isi/n</b>	I would be	<b>(me) ol/isi/mme</b>	we would be
<b>(sinä) ol/isi/t</b>	you would be	<b>(te) ol/isi/tte</b>	you would be
<b>hän ol/isi</b>	he/she would be	<b>he ol/isi/vat</b>	they would be

## §28 'TO HAVE' IN FINNISH

In the Finnish possessive structure the possessor appears in the adessive case **-lla ~ -llä**; the form **on** of the verb **olla** follows, and then the person or thing possessed.

Possessor + **-lla ~ -llä** + **on** + person or thing possessed.

<b>Paavo/lla on uusi pyörä.</b>	Paavo has a new bicycle (‘at’ Paavo is...).
<b>Isä/llä on kaksi autoa.</b>	Father has two cars.
<b>Suome/lla on hyvät mahdollisuudet.</b>	Finland has good chances.
<b>Äidi/llä on silmälasit.</b>	Mother has glasses.

The adessive forms of the personal pronouns are very common.

<b>minu/lla on</b>	I have	<b>mei/llä on</b>	we have
<b>sinu/lla on</b>	you have	<b>tei/llä on</b>	you have
<b>häne/llä on</b>	he/she has	<b>hei/llä on</b>	they have

For inalienable possession or ‘intimate connection’ the inessive case **-ssa ~ -ssä** is used instead of the adessive.

<b>Maa/ssa on uusi hallitus.</b>	The country has a new government.
<b>Venee/ssä on pitkä masto.</b>	The boat has a tall mast.
<b>Puu/ssa on vihreät lehdet.</b>	The tree has green leaves.
<b>Auto/ssa on neljä pyörää.</b>	The car has four wheels.

## §29 NEGATIVE SENTENCES

There is no invariable negation word in Finnish negative sentences. Negation is expressed by an inflected verb, which shows concord of grammatical person with the subject of the sentence like any other finite verb.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>First person</i>	<b>en</b>	<b>emme</b>
<i>Second person</i>	<b>et</b>	<b>ette</b>
<i>Third person</i>	<b>ei</b>	<b>eivät</b>



The negative forms of the present indicative are based on this negation verb, which is followed by the inflectional stem (§23) of the main verb, without any personal ending and in the weak grade (§15) except before a long vowel.

Negation verb	+ Inflectional stem of main verb
+ personal ending	in weak grade (unless before long vowel)

The changes caused by consonant gradation are important: cf. **anta/a** '(to) give': **hän anta/a** 'he/she gives', **anna/n** 'I give', **anna/tte** 'you (pl.) give'. Further examples follow of the present indicative negative. The form of the main verb can always be derived by detaching the first or second person ending from the present affirmative.

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<b>tulet</b>	you come	<b>et tule</b>	you do not come
<b>luemme</b>	we read	<b>emme lue</b>	we do not read
<b>he lukevat</b>	they read	<b>he eivät lue</b>	they do not read
<b>hän lukee</b>	he/she reads	<b>hän ei lue</b>	he/she does not read
<b>hyppään</b>	I jump	<b>en hyppää</b>	I do not jump
<b>hyppäätte</b>	you (pl.) jump	<b>ette hyppää</b>	you (pl.) do not jump
<b>se vetää</b>	it pulls	<b>se ei vedä</b>	it does not pull
<b>vedän</b>	I pull	<b>en vedä</b>	I do not pull
<b>he vetävät</b>	they pull	<b>he eivät vedä</b>	they do not pull
<b>vedämme</b>	we pull	<b>emme vedä</b>	we do not pull
<b>hän tarvitsee</b>	he/she needs	<b>hän ei tarvitse</b>	he/she does not need

The negative forms of **olla** all contain the stem **ole-**.

<b>en ole</b>	I am not	<b>emme ole</b>	we are not
<b>et ole</b>	you are not	<b>ette ole</b>	you are not
<b>ei ole</b>	(he/she) is not	<b>eivät ole</b>	(they) are not

The negative forms of other tenses will be presented later together with the tenses themselves (§63). The following rule concerning negative sentences is an important one.

In negative sentences the following constituents are in the partitive:

- (1) the object
- (2) that which is possessed
- (3) that which does not exist

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| (1) <b>Emme juo <u>olut</u>/ta.</b><br><b>Ettekö näe <u>auto</u>/a?</b><br><b>En tunne <u>hän</u>/tä.</b><br><b>He eivät omista <u>vene</u>/ttä.</b>  | We do not drink <i>beer</i> .<br>Don't you see <i>the car</i> ?<br>I don't know <i>him/her</i> .<br>They do not own <i>a boat</i> .                                      |
| (2) <b>Minulla ei ole <u>auto</u>/a.</b><br><b>Meillä ei ole <u>punaviini</u>/ä.</b><br><b>Eikö teillä ole <u>lämmi</u>n/tä <u>ruoka</u>/a?</b><br><b>Maassa ei ole <u>hallitus</u>/ta.</b> | I don't have <i>a car</i> .<br>We don't have any <i>red wine</i> .<br>Don't you have any <i>warm food</i> ?<br>The country has no <i>government</i> .                    |
| (3) <b>Kadulla ei ole <u>auto</u>/a.</b><br><b>Kotona ei ole <u>isä</u>/ä.</b><br><b>Jääkaapissa ei ole <u>maito</u>/a.</b><br><b>Komerossa ei ole <u>vaatte</u>/i/ta.</b>                  | There is no <i>car</i> in the street.<br>There is no <i>father</i> at home.<br>There is no <i>milk</i> in the fridge.<br>There are no <i>clothes</i> in the<br>cupboard. |

### §30 QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS

#### §30.1 QUESTIONS WITH **-KO** ~ **-KÖ** ('YES/NO' QUESTIONS)

Direct questions that can be answered by 'yes' or 'no' are formed by moving the word being questioned to the beginning of the sentence and adding to it the enclitic particle **-ko** ~ **-kö**, which is almost always the last ending of the word. The word questioned is most commonly the verb. If we take the sentence **Pekka saapui Turkuun aamulla** 'Pekka arrived at Turku in the morning', we can form the following questions:

**Saapu/i/ko Pekka Turkuun aamulla?**

Did Pekka arrive at Turku in the morning?

**Pekka/ko saapui Turkuun aamulla?**

Was it Pekka who arrived at Turku in the morning?

**Turku/un/ko Pekka saapui aamulla?**

Was it at Turku that Pekka arrived in the morning?

**Aamu/lla/ko Pekka saapui Turkuun?**

Was it in the morning that Pekka arrived at Turku?

Here are some more examples of the formation of these direct questions.

**Mene/t/kö ulos?**

Are you going out?

**Ole/t/ko sairas?**

Are you ill?

**Sa/isi/n/ko oluen?**

Could I have a beer?

**Pitä/ä/kö Jussi Marjasta?**

Does Jussi like Marja?

**Tietä/vät/kö he, että tulen?**

Do they know that I am coming?

**Puu/ko tämä on?**

Is this a TREE? (capital letters  
indicating emphasis)

<b>Ruotsi/ssa/<u>ko</u> Kalle on?</b>	Is Kalle in SWEDEN?
<b>Häne/t/<u>kö</u> sinä tapasit?</b>	Was it him/her that you met?
<b>Presidenti/ksi/<u>kö</u> Koivisto valittiin?</b>	Was Koivisto elected PRESIDENT?

There are many ways of answering such questions in the affirmative. The word being questioned is often repeated (in the right person, if it is a verb, and without the ending **-ko ~ -kö**). If the word questioned is a verb one can also answer **kyllä** ‘yes’, and if it is some other word one can answer **niin** (literally: ‘so’). Both **kyllä** and **niin** can be used with a repetition of the word questioned. The word **joo** ‘yes, yeah’ is used mostly in the spoken language.

<i>Question</i>	<i>Various affirmative answers</i>
<b>Tul/i/<u>ko</u> Pekka Turkuun?</b> Did Pekka come to Turku?	– <b>Tuli.</b> – <b>Kyllä tuli.</b> – <b>Kyllä.</b>
<b>Ole/t/<u>ko</u> sairas?</b> Are you ill?	– <b>Olen.</b> – <b>Kyllä olen.</b> – <b>Kyllä.</b>
<b>Mene/tte/<u>kö</u> tanssimaan?</b> Are you going dancing?	– <b>Menemme.</b> – <b>Kyllä menemme.</b> – <b>Kyllä.</b>
<b>O/vat/<u>ko</u> lapset ulkona?</b> Are the children outside?	– <b>Ovat.</b> – <b>Kyllä ovat.</b> – <b>Kyllä.</b>
<b>Auto/n/<u>ko</u> ostitte?</b> Was it a car that you bought?	– <b>Niin.</b> – <b>Niin, auton.</b> – <b>Auton.</b>
<b>Mäntynieme/ssä/<u>kö</u> presidentti asuu?</b> Is it at Mäntyniemi that the president lives?	– <b>Niin.</b> – <b>Niin, Mäntyniemessä.</b> – <b>Mäntyniemessä.</b>

Negative answers to direct questions are formed from the negation verb (§28), which must be in the right person and may be followed by the inflectional stem of the main verb with no personal ending.

<i>Question</i>	<i>Negative answer</i>
<b>Mene/e/<u>kö</u> Tauno Kotkaan?</b> Is Tauno going to Kotka?	– <b>Ei (mene).</b>
<b>Ole/t/<u>ko</u> kovin sairas?</b> Are you very ill?	– <b>En (ole).</b>

<b>Syötte/kö hernekeittoa?</b> Do you eat pea-soup?	– <b>Emme (syö).</b> – <b>En (syö).</b>
<b>Ovat/kö kirjat laukussa?</b> Are the books in the bag?	– <b>Eivät (ole).</b>
<b>Viljo/kö siellä on?</b> Is that Viljo there?	– <b>Ei (vaan Auli).</b> No (it's Auli).
<b>Juna/lla/kö tulitte?</b> Did you come by train?	– <b>Emme (vaan linja-autolla).</b> No (by bus).

A question can be made especially polite by using the conditional ending **-isi-** and/or the particle **-han ~ -hän**.

<b>Sa/isi/n/kö pullon punaviiniä?</b>	Could I have a bottle of red wine?
<b>Sa/isi/n/kö/hän kylmän oluen?</b>	Might I have a cold beer?
<b>On/kö/hän Viljo Kohonen tavattavissa?</b>	I wonder if Viljo Kohonen is in?
<b>Ol/isi/kö/hän teillä nailonsukkia?</b>	I wonder if you might have any nylon stockings?

The ending **-ko ~ -kö** is also used in indirect questions.

<b>En tiedä, men/i/kö Auli kotiin.</b>	I don't know if Auli went home.
<b>Kysy, on/kö heillä lämmintä ruokaa.</b>	Ask if they have warm food.
<b>Ole/t/ko varma, saa/kö sinne mennä?</b>	Are you sure that ( <i>lit.</i> whether) one can go there?
<b>Kerro, maistu/i/ko ruoka hyvältä.</b>	Say whether the food tasted good.

### §30.2 QUESTION-WORD QUESTIONS ('WH'-QUESTIONS)

The second main class of questions is question-word questions, which are answered more precisely (not just 'yes' or 'no'). The most important question words in Finnish are the following (cf. §56):

<b>mikä</b>	what, which (more concrete, definite meaning)
<b>mitä</b>	what, which (more abstract, indefinite meaning; partitive of <b>mikä</b> )
<b>millainen</b>	what kind of
<b>missä</b>	where
<b>mistä</b>	from where, whence
<b>mihin</b>	where to, whither (more precise)
<b>minne</b>	where to, whither (less precise)
<b>miten</b>	how, in what way
<b>koska</b>	when
<b>milloin</b>	when
<b>kuka</b>	who
<b>kuinka</b>	how
<b>kumpi</b>	which of two

**Mikä, kuka** and **millainen** decline in different cases like ordinary nominals. In fact, **mitä, missä, mistä** and **mihin** are inflected forms of the pronoun **mikä**. **Kenen** ‘whose’ is the genitive of the pronoun **kuka**.

*Question*

**Mikä tämä on?**

*What is this?*

**Mitä tämä on?**

*What is this?*

**Missä Auli on?**

*Where is Auli?*

**Mistä tulet?**

*Where do you come from?*

**Mihin panen vaatteeni?**

*Where shall I put my clothes?*

**Millainen mies hän on?**

*What kind of a man is he?*

**Koska John tuli Suomeen?**

*When did John come to Finland?*

**Kuka tuo pitkä nainen on?**

*Who is that tall woman?*

**Kuinka paljon pullo olutta maksaa?**

*How much does a bottle of beer cost?*

**Kenen lasi tämä on?**

*Whose glass is this?*

**Kenellä pallo on?**

*Who has got the ball?*

(lit. ‘At’ whom is...)

*Answer*

**(Se on) kynä.**

(It is) a pen.

**(Se on) olutta.**

(It is) beer.

**(Auli on) luennolla.**

(Auli is) at the lecture.

**(Tulen) Oslostä.**

(I come) from Oslo.

**(Pane ne) sohvalle.**

(Put them) on the sofa.

**(Hän on) mukava (mies).**

(He is a) nice (man).

**(Hän tuli Suomeen) viime vuonna.**

(He came to Finland) last year.

**(Hän on) Tyyne Nyrkiö.**

(She is) Tyyne Nyrkiö.

**(Se maksaa) kolme markkaa.**

(It costs) three marks.

**(Se on) Jorman.**

(It is) Jorma’s.

**(Pallo on) minulla.**

I have. (lit. [The ball is] ‘at’ me.)

### §31 CONCORD OF ATTRIBUTES

Attributes are modifiers of nouns. There are two kinds of attributes occurring before the noun: pronoun attributes (**tämä auto** ‘this car’) and adjective attributes (**sininen auto** ‘a blue car’). Both agree with the headword in case and number.

Attributes agree with the headword in case and number.
--

<b>iso auto</b>	a big car
<b>iso/t auto/t</b>	the big cars
<b>iso/ssa auto/ssa</b>	in the big car
<b>iso/i/ssa auto/i/ssa</b>	in the big cars
<b>sininen kukka</b>	a blue flower
<b>sinise/t kuka/t</b>	the blue flowers
<b>sinise/ssä kuka/ssa</b>	in the blue flower
<b>sinis/i/ssä kuk/i/ssa</b>	in the blue flowers
<b>tuo punainen kukka</b>	that red flower
<b>tuo/n punaise/n kuka/n</b>	of that red flower
<b>tuo/ssa punaise/ssa kuka/ssa</b>	in that red flower
<b>nuo punaise/t kuka/t</b>	those red flowers
<b>no/i/lla punais/i/lla kuk/i/lla</b>	with those red flowers
<b>tämä vanha kahvi</b>	this old coffee
<b>tä/tä vanha/a kahvi/a</b>	this old coffee (part.)
<b>tä/stä vanha/sta kahvi/sta</b>	out of this old coffee
<b>tä/llä vanha/lla kahvi/lla</b>	with this old coffee

Attributes occurring before plural headwords (§26) are always in the plural, but such expressions may refer to either singular or plural concepts.

<b>kaunii/t kasvo/t</b>	a beautiful face/the beautiful faces
<b>nämä kasvo/t</b>	this face/these faces
<b>terävä/t sakse/t</b>	sharp scissors (one pair or several)
<b>harma/i/ssa housu/i/ssa</b>	in grey trousers
<b>yhde/t sakse/t</b>	one pair of scissors
<b>kahde/t kasvo/t</b>	two faces

There are a few adjectives or adjective-like words which are exceptions to the concord rule and do not agree with the headword. The most common ones are: **ensi** ‘first’, **eri** ‘different’, **joka** ‘every’, **koko** ‘whole’, **pikku** ‘little’, **viime** ‘last’, cf. **ensi kerra/lla** ‘next time’; **viime talve/na** ‘last winter’; **koko kaupungi/ssa** ‘in the whole town’; **joka ihmise/lle** ‘to every person’; **eri sängy/ssä** ‘in a different bed’.

## 8 THE PARTITIVE

- *Formation of the partitive*
- *Use of the partitive*

After the nominative, the most important case in Finnish is the partitive. In many instances the nominative and the partitive are in opposition to each other. Both may appear as the case of the subject, object and complement (for the object, see also §37).

The nominative expresses a concrete or abstract whole or a definite quantity (§25). The partitive often expresses an indefinite, non-limited quantity of something, allowing the possibility that more of it may exist.

### §32 FORMATION OF THE PARTITIVE

#### §32.1 PARTITIVE SINGULAR

In the singular the partitive has three endings: **-a ~ -ä**, **-ta ~ -tä**, **-tta ~ -ttä**. The first two also appear in the plural.

The ending **-a ~ -ä** occurs when the inflectional stem ends in a consonant followed by a short vowel (which is not an **-e-** that may be dropped).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem (gen. sing.)</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
<b>oma</b>	own	oma/n	–	oma/ <b>a</b>
<b>päivä</b>	day	päivä/n	–	päivä/ <b>ä</b>
<b>vanha</b>	old	vanha/n	–	vanha/ <b>a</b>
<b>elämä</b>	life	elämä/n	–	elämä/ <b>ä</b>
<b>talo</b>	house	talo/n	–	talo/ <b>a</b>
<b>tuoli</b>	chair	tuoli/n	–	tuoli/ <b>a</b>
<b>hetki</b>	moment	hetke/n	18.2	hetke/ <b>ä</b>
<b>katu</b>	street	kadu/n	–	katu/ <b>a</b>
<b>käsky</b>	order	käsky/n	–	käsky/ <b>ä</b>
<b>Suomi</b>	Finland	Suome/n	18.2	Suome/ <b>a</b>
<b>koti</b>	home	kodi/n	–	koti/ <b>a</b>

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem (gen. sing.)</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
<b>kaupunki</b>	town	kaupungi/n	–	kaupunki/ <b>a</b>
<b>kivi</b>	stone	kive/n	18.2	kive/ <b>ä</b>
<b>presidentti</b>	president	presidenti/n	–	presidentti/ <b>ä</b>
<b>Helsinki</b>	Helsinki	Helsingi/n	–	Helsinki/ <b>ä</b>
<b>kaikki</b>	all	kaike/n	18.2	kaikke/ <b>a</b>
<b>onni</b>	luck	onne/n	18.2	onne/ <b>a</b>
<b>asia</b>	matter	asia/n	–	asia/ <b>a</b>
<b>ainoa</b>	only	ainoa/n	–	ainoa/ <b>a</b>
<b>tärkeä</b>	important	tärkeä/n	–	tarkeä/ <b>ä</b>
<b>vaikea</b>	difficult	vaikea/n	–	vaikea/ <b>a</b>

Words ending in **-ea**, **-eä** in particular may also take the longer ending **-ta ~ -tä**, e.g. **korkea/a** ~ **korkea/ta** 'high', **pehmeä/ä** ~ **pehmeä/tä** 'soft'.

The ending **-ta ~ -tä** occurs after

- (a) a basic form ending in a long vowel or a diphthong
- (b) an inflectional stem ending in a consonant + **-e-** which has then been dropped
- (c) a basic form ending in a consonant
- (d) a monosyllabic pronoun stem

	<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem (gen. sing.)</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
(a)	<b>maa</b>	country	maa/n	–	maa/ <b>ta</b>
	<b>syy</b>	reason	syy/n	–	syy/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>tie</b>	road	tie/n	–	tie/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>Porvoo</b>	(place name)	Porvoo/n	–	Porvoo/ <b>ta</b>
	<b>työ</b>	work	työ/n	–	työ/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>pää</b>	head	pää/n	–	pää/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>yö</b>	night	yö/n	–	yö/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>kuu</b>	moon	kuu/n	–	kuu/ <b>ta</b>
(b)	<b>kieli</b>	language	kiele/n	18.3	kiel/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>pieni</b>	small	piene/n	18.3	pien/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>lumi</b>	snow	lume/n	18.3	lun/ <b>ta</b> (NB: <b>n</b> )
	<b>ääni</b>	sound	ääne/n	18.3	ään/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>meri</b>	sea	mere/n	18.3	mer/ <b>ta (-tä!)</b>
	<b>veri</b>	blood	vere/n	18.3	ver/ <b>ta (-tä!)</b>
	<b>vesi</b>	water	vede/n	18.4	vet/ <b>tä</b>
	<b>uusi</b>	new	uude/n	18.4	uut/ <b>ta</b>



<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem (gen. sing.)</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
<b>kansi</b>	cover	kanne/n	18.4	kant/ <b>ta</b>
<b>ihminen</b>	person	ihmise/n	20.1	ihmis/ <b>tä</b>
<b>Virtanen</b>	(surname)	Virtase/n	20.1	Virtas/ <b>ta</b>
<b>tavallinen</b>	ordinary	tavallise/n	20.1	tavallis/ <b>ta</b>
<b>hyvyys</b>	goodness	hyvyysde/n	20.4	hyvyyt/ <b>tä</b>
<b>likaisuus</b>	dirtyness	likaisuude/n	20.4	likaisuut/ <b>ta</b>
(c) <b>ajatus</b>	thought	ajatukse/n	20.2	ajatus/ <b>ta</b>
<b>kysymys</b>	question	kysymykse/n	20.2	kysymys/ <b>tä</b>
<b>kiitos</b>	thanks	kiitokse/n	20.2	kiitos/ <b>ta</b>
<b>taivas</b>	heaven	taivaa/n	20.3	taivas/ <b>ta</b>
<b>kirves</b>	axe	kirvee/n	20.3	kirves/ <b>tä</b>
<b>puhelin</b>	telephone	puhelime/n	20.6	puhelin/ <b>ta</b>
<b>arvoton</b>	valueless	arvottoma/n	20.6	arvoton/ <b>ta</b>
<b>askel</b>	pace	askele/n	20.7	askel/ <b>ta</b>
<b>mies</b>	man	miehe/n	20.8	mies/ <b>tä</b>
<b>olut</b>	beer	olue/n	20.8	olut/ <b>ta</b>
(d) <b>tuo</b>	that	tuo/n	–	tuo/ <b>ta</b>
<b>tämä</b>	this	tämä/n	–	tä/ <b>tä</b>
<b>se</b>	it	se/n	–	si/ <b>tä</b>
<b>joka</b>	which (relative)	jonka	–	jo/ <b>ta</b>
<b>mikä</b>	which	minkä	–	mi/ <b>tä</b>
<b>kuka</b>	who	kene/n	–	ke/ <b>tä</b>

The partitive ending for words ending in **-io**, **-iö** is **-ta** ~ **-tä**, e.g. **valtio/ta** ‘state’, **radio/ta** ‘radio’, **keittiö/tä** ‘kitchen’, **yhtiö/tä** ‘company’.

The ending **-tta** ~ **-ttä** is attached to basic forms ending in **-e** (§19).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem (gen. sing.)</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
<b>perhe</b>	family	perhee/n	perhe/ <b>ttä</b>
<b>suhde</b>	relation	suhtee/n	suhde/ <b>ttä</b>
<b>liikenne</b>	traffic	liikentee/n	liikenne/ <b>ttä</b>
<b>kone</b>	machine	konee/n	kone/ <b>ttä</b>
<b>tunne</b>	feeling	tuntee/n	tunne/ <b>ttä</b>
<b>kirje</b>	letter	kirjee/n	kirje/ <b>ttä</b>
<b>virhe</b>	mistake	virhee/n	virhe/ <b>ttä</b>

However, the words **itse** ‘self’, **kolme** ‘three’ and **nukke** ‘doll’, and proper names like **Kalle**, **Raaha**, **Ville**, take the ending **-a** ~ **-ä**.

## §32.2 PARTITIVE PLURAL

In the plural the partitive has two endings, **-a ~ -ä** and **-ta ~ -tä**, which are added to the inflectional stem after the plural **-i-** (§26). The plural **-i-** causes vowel changes in the stem (§16), and between vowels **-i-** changes to **-j-** (§26). Consonant gradation is rare in the partitive plural, since the endings do not fulfil the basic conditions for alternation (§15.2).

The ending **-a ~ -ä** is always used when the inflectional stem of the singular ends in a short vowel.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Partitive plural s</i>
<b>talo</b>	house	talo/n	–	talo/a	talo/j <sup>a</sup>
<b>katu</b>	street	kadu/n	–	katu/a	katu/j <sup>a</sup>
<b>tunti</b>	hour	tunni/n	–	tunti/a	tunte/j <sup>a</sup>
<b>lasi</b>	glass	lasi/n	–	lasi/a	lase/j <sup>a</sup>
<b>kivi</b>	stone	kive/n	18.2	kive/ä	kiv/i/ä
<b>lehti</b>	newspaper	lehde/n	18.2	lehte/ä	leht/i/ä
<b>tuuli</b>	wind	tuule/n	18.3	tuul/ta	tuul/i/ä
<b>pieni</b>	small	piene/n	18.3	pien/tä	pien/i/ä
<b>käsi</b>	hand	käde/n	18.4	kät/tä	käs/i/ä
<b>kansi</b>	cover	kanne/n	18.4	kant/ta	kans/i/ä
<b>päivä</b>	day	päivä/n	–	päivä/ä	päiv/i/ä
<b>sama</b>	same	sama/n	–	sama/a	samo/j <sup>a</sup>
<b>poika</b>	boy	poja/n	–	poika/a	poik/i/ä
<b>kirja</b>	book	kirja/n	–	kirja/a	kirjo/j <sup>a</sup>
<b>nainen</b>	woman	naise/n	20.1	nais/ta	nais/i/ä
<b>yleinen</b>	general	yleise/n	20.1	yleis/tä	yleis/i/ä
<b>sormus</b>	ring	sormukse/n	20.2	sormus/ta	sormuks/i/ä
<b>nuoruus</b>	youth	nuoruude/n	20.4	nuoruut/ta	nuoruuks/i/ä
<b>avain</b>	key	avaimen	20.5	avain/ta	avaim/i/ä
<b>koditon</b>	homeless	kodittoma/n	20.6	koditon/ta	kodittom/i/ä
<b>jäsen</b>	member	jasene/n	20.7	jäsen/tä	jäsen/i/ä
<b>mies</b>	man	miehe/n	20.8	mies/tä	mieh/i/ä

In words of three or more syllables such as **kanava** ‘canal’, **aurinko** ‘sun’, **ammatti** ‘profession’, the ending **-a ~ -ä** occurs when the last vowel of the stem is dropped, and otherwise when the penultimate syllable of the word ends in a consonant (**pääl.lik.kö** ‘chief’, **au.rin.ko** ‘sun’) or in two vowels (**rat.kai.su** ‘decision’).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>
<b>aurinko</b>	sun	auringo/n	aurinko/a	aurinko/j/ <b>a</b>
<b>ammatti</b>	profession	ammati/n	ammatti/a	ammatte/j/ <b>a</b>
<b>hedelmä</b>	fruit	hedelmä/n	hedelmä/ä	hedelm/i/ <b>ä</b>
<b>ystävä</b>	friend	ystävä/n	ystävä/ä	ystäv/i/ <b>ä</b>
<b>metalli</b>	metal	metalli/n	metalli/a	metalle/j/ <b>a</b>
<b>kysely</b>	inquiry	kysely/n	kysely/ä	kysely/j/ <b>ä</b>
<b>päällikkö</b>	chief	päällikö/n	päällikkö/ä	päällikkö/j/ <b>ä</b>
<b>ratkaisu</b>	decision	ratkaisu/n	ratkaisu/a	ratkaisu/j/ <b>a</b>
<b>omena</b>	apple	omena/n	omena/a	omen/i/ <b>a</b>

The ending **-ta ~ -tä** is used when the inflectional stem of the singular ends in two vowels.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>
<b>maa</b>	country	maa/n	–	maa/ta	ma/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>kuu</b>	moon	kuu/n	–	kuu/ta	ku/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>syy</b>	reason	syy/n	–	syy/tä	sy/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>vapaa</b>	free	vapaa/n	–	vapaa/ta	vapa/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>perhe</b>	family	perhee/n	19	perhe/ttä	perhe/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>lääke</b>	medicine	lääkke/n	19	lääke/ttä	lääkke/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>aine</b>	substance	ainee/n	19	aine/tta	aine/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>tie</b>	road	tie/n	–	tie/tä	te/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>tuo</b>	that	tuo/n	–	tuo/ta	no/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>työ</b>	work	työ/n	–	työ/tä	tö/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>rikas</b>	rich	rikkaa/n	20.3	rikas/ta	rikka/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>hammas</b>	tooth	hampaa/n	20.3	hammas/ta	hampa/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>kallis</b>	expensive	kalli/n	20.3	kallis/ta	kalli/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>ohut</b>	thin	ohue/n	20.8	ohut/ta	ohu/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>lyhyt</b>	short	lyhye/n	20.8	lyhyt/tä	lyhy/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>asia</b>	matter	asia/n	–	asia/a	asio/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>tärkeä</b>	important	tärkeä/n	–	tärkeä/ä	tärke/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>ainoa</b>	only	ainoa/n	–	ainoa/a	aino/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>komea</b>	fine	komea/n	–	komea/a	kome/i/ <b>ta</b>

Many nouns of three or more syllables, with a penultimate syllable ending in short vowel, take the partitive plural ending **-ta ~ -tä**. This also applies to nouns ending in **-kka ~ -kkä** and **-la ~ -lä**.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>
<b>lukija</b>	reader	lukija/a	lukijo/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>kulkija</b>	wanderer	kulkija/a	kulkijo/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>lusikka</b>	spoon	lusikka/a	lusiko/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>kahvila</b>	café	kahvila/a	kahvilo/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>käymälä</b>	toilet	käymälä/ä	käymälö/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>omena</b>	apple	omena/a	omeno/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>päärynä</b>	pear	päärynä/ä	päärynö/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>peruna</b>	potato	peruna/a	peruno/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>tavara</b>	thing	tavara/a	tavaro/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>ankkuri</b>	anchor	ankkuri/a	ankkure/i/ <b>ta</b>
<b>arvelu</b>	supposition	arvelu/a	arvelu/i/ <b>ta</b>

In many words of this type both **-ta ~ -tä** and **-a ~ -ä** are possible, but consonant gradation then affects the stem differently depending on the form chosen; for example **päällikkö/j/ä : päällikö/i/tä** ‘chiefs’, **lusikko/j/a : lusiko/i/ta** ‘spoons’, **sairaalo/i/ta : sairaalo/j/a** ‘hospitals’, **omen/i/a : omeno/i/ta** ‘apples’.

Adjectives of three or more syllables form their partitive plural in the normal way by adding the ending **-a ~ -ä** (cf. §16).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>
<b>ahkera</b>	hard-working	ahkera/a	ahker/i/ <b>a</b>
<b>ankara</b>	severe	ankara/a	ankar/i/ <b>a</b>
<b>hämärä</b>	dim	hämärä/ä	hämär/i/ <b>ä</b>
<b>vikkeliä</b>	quick	vikkeliä/ä	vikkeli/i/ <b>ä</b>

The following pronoun forms are important:

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Partitive singular</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>
<b>minä</b>	I	minu/ <b>a</b>	
<b>sinä</b>	you (sing.)	sinu/ <b>a</b>	
<b>hän</b>	he/she	hän/ <b>tä</b>	
<b>me</b>	we		me/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>te</b>	you (pl.)		te/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>he</b>	they		he/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>se</b>	it	si/ <b>tä</b>	ni/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>tämä</b>	this	tä/ <b>tä</b>	nä/i/ <b>tä</b>
<b>tuo</b>	that	tuo/ <b>ta</b>	no/i/ <b>ta</b>

### §33 USE OF THE PARTITIVE

#### §33.1 PARTITIVE SUBJECT

It is helpful to compare the use of the partitive with that of the nominative (§25.3): these two cases are semantically complementary to each other. The following rule concerns the use of the partitive as a subject and object case.

With divisible words the partitive expresses an indefinite, non-limited quantity.

Typical uses of the partitive are thus **vet/tä** ‘water’, **valo/a** ‘light’, **rakkaut/ta** ‘love’, **tuole/j/a** ‘chairs’, **auto/j/a** ‘cars’. The following rule concerns the partitive subject.

In sentences with a partitive subject

- 1 the subject is generally at the end of the sentence
- 2 the finite verb is always in the third person singular

The examples below are divided into two groups: divisible indefinite singular words (indefinite mass nouns), and divisible indefinite plural forms of words that are non-divisible in the singular (i.e. indefinite plural count forms).

- (1) Divisible subjects expressing an indefinite quantity are in the partitive singular (mass, abstract and collective words).

**Purkissa on leipä/ä.**

There is (*some*) *bread* in the tin.

**Pullossa on maito/a.**

There is (*some*) *milk* in the bottle.

**Torille tuli kansa/a.**

*People* came to the market place.

**Huoneessa on valo/a.**

There is (*some*) *light* in the room.

**Kellariinkin valui vet/tä.**

(*Some*) *water* leaked into the cellar, too.

**Suomessa on vielä puhdas/ta ilma/a.**

Finland still has *clean air*.

**Täällä tapahtuu kaikenlais/ta.**

‘Here there happens *everything possible*.’

(i.e. ‘All kinds of things happen here.’)

**Kaikenlais/ta täällä tapahtuu.**

‘*Everything possible* happens here.’

(‘All kinds of things happen here.’)

**Jääkaapissa on *olut/ta*.**  
***Olut/ta* jääkaapissa on!**

In the fridge there is (*some*) *beer*.  
 There is (*some*) *BEER* in the fridge!

The sentences above should be compared with the following ones, where the subject expresses a definite (total) amount. These subjects are normally at the beginning of the sentence.

***Leipä* on purkissa.**  
***Maito* on pullossa.**  
***Kansa* tuli torille.**  
***Vesi* valui kellariin.**  
***Kulta* löytyi Outokummusta.**

*The bread* is in the tin.  
*The milk* is in the bottle.  
*The people* came to the market place.  
*The water* leaked into the cellar.  
*The gold* was found at Outokumpu.

(2) Plural subject nouns (non-divisible in the singular expressing an indefinite quantity) appear in the partitive plural.

**Kadulla on *autof/j/a*.**  
**Liikkui *huhuj/a*.**  
**Täällä on *pien/i/ä laps/i/a*.**  
***Ihmis/i/ä* kuolee joka päivä.**  
**Syntyi *vaikeuks/i/a*.**  
**Minulla on *mon/i/a ystäv/i/ä*.**  
**Onko Kallella *laps/i/a*?**  
***Sellais/i/a virhe/i/tä* esiintyy usein.**

There are *cars* in the street.  
 There were (*lit. 'moved'*) *rumours* around.  
 There are *small children* here.  
 (*Some*) *people* die every day.  
*Difficulties* arose.  
 I have *many friends*.  
 Does Kalle have *any children*?  
*Such mistakes* occur often.

The corresponding 'total' subjects (usually, but not always, definite in English) are in the nominative plural, and the finite verb then shows concord of person with the subject.

***Auto/t* ovat kadulla.**  
***Lapse/t* ovat täällä.**  
***Ihmise/t* kuolevat.**  
***Laiva/t* tulevat satamaan.**  
***Vaikeude/t* eivät tule yksin.**

*The cars* are in the street.  
*The children* are here.  
*People* die (i.e. *all* people).  
*The ships* come to the harbour.  
*Difficulties* do not come singly (*all*, not just some).

(3) The partitive is used if the existence of the entity referred to by the subject word is completely denied (i.e. in most negative sentences).

**Kadulla ei ole *auto/a*.**  
**Maassa ei ole *hallitus/ta*.**

There is no *car* in the street.  
 The country has no *government*.

<b>Minulla ei ole tietoa siitä.</b>	I have no <i>knowledge</i> of it.
<b>Koti/a ei enää ollut.</b>	<i>Home</i> was no longer.
<b>Täällä ei ole yhtään tuttu/a.</b>	There is not <i>a single person</i> I know here.
<b>Juna/a ei vielä näy.</b>	<i>The train</i> is not yet in sight ( <i>lit.</i> ‘is not seen’).

However, if for example the actual existence of something is not completely denied but only its being in a particular place, the nominative is used.

<b>Auto ei ole kadulla.</b>	<i>The car</i> is not in the street.
<b>Hallitus ei ole Turussa.</b>	<i>The government</i> is not in Turku.
<b>Juna ei ole asemalla.</b>	<i>The train</i> is not in the station.

The partitive can sometimes also be the subject case of non-divisible words, in interrogative sentences expecting a negative answer.

<b>Onko teillä tätä kirja/a?</b>	Do you have <i>this book</i> ?
<b>Tuleeko hänestä lääkäri/ä?</b>	Will he really become <i>a doctor</i> ? ( <i>lit.</i> ‘Will out of him come a doctor?’)

### §33.2 PARTITIVE OBJECT

The cases of the object are partitive and accusative, as the cases of the subject are nominative and partitive. The accusative object in some ways corresponds to the nominative subject (for the different accusative endings see §38: the most common is **-n**).

<i>Accusative object</i>	
<b>Minä ostan auto/n.</b>	I(’ll) buy <i>a/the car</i> .
<b>Silja joi maido/n.</b>	Silja drank (up) <i>the milk</i> .
<b>Osta auto.</b>	Buy <i>a/the car</i> .
<b>Auto/t hankittiin halvalla.</b>	<i>The cars</i> were obtained cheaply ( <i>lit.</i> ‘One obtained...’).
<b>Ostamme auto/t.</b>	We(’ll) buy <i>the cars</i> .

Like the nominative subject, the accusative object expresses a whole or a definite quantity. The partitive usually expresses an indefinite quantity (Rule (3) below), but as one of the object cases it also has other functions (Rules (1) and (2)).

(1) The object of a negative sentence is in the partitive.

<b>En osta auto/a.</b>	I don’t/won’t buy <i>a/the car</i> .
<b>Pekka ei nähnyt Leena/a.</b>	Pekka did not see <i>Leena</i> .
<b>Silja ei juo maito/a.</b>	Silja does not drink ( <i>the</i> ) <i>milk</i> .
<b>En tunne Kekkos/ta.</b>	I do not know <i>Kekkonen</i> .

<b>Paavo ei syö puuro/a.</b>	Paavo does not eat ( <i>the</i> ) porridge.
<b>Etkö opiskele suome/a?</b>	Don't you study <i>Finnish</i> ?
<b>He eivät ymmärrä tä/tä.</b>	They don't understand <i>this</i> .
<b>En ole koskaan tavannut hän/tä.</b>	I have never met <i>him/her</i> .
<b>Si/tä emme vielä tiedä.</b>	<i>That</i> we don't know yet.
<b>Janne ei lue sanomaleht/i/ä.</b>	Janne does not read ( <i>the</i> ) <i>newspapers</i> .
<b>En tunne noi/ita mieh/i/ä.</b>	I don't know <i>those men</i> .
<b>Ettekö ole lukeneet nä/i/tä kirjoj/a?</b>	Haven't you read <i>these books</i> ?

This rule always applies. It makes no difference whether the meaning of the object is definite or indefinite. The same negative sentence thus corresponds to two different affirmative sentences.

*Affirmative*

*Negative*

**Silja joi maido/n.**

Silja drank *the milk*.

**Silja ei juonut maito/a.**

Silja didn't drink *the/any milk*.

**Silja joi maito/a.**

Silja drank (*some*) *milk*.

(2)(a) The object is in the partitive if the action expressed by the verb does not lead to any 'important' final result (i.e. the action is irresultative).

In English this use of the partitive often corresponds to the progressive form of the verb ('be + -ing'); see the translation of the examples below. The accusative, on the other hand, indicates that the action expressed by the verb *has* led to an important result (is resultative).

*Irresultative*

(*partitive object*)

*Resultative*

(*accusative object*)

**Tyttö luki läksy/ä.**

The girl *was doing* her homework (i.e. had not yet finished).

**Tyttö luki läksy/n.**

The girl *did* (i.e. finished) her homework.

**Väinö rakensi talo/a.**

Väinö *was building* a/the house.

**Väinö rakensi talo/n.**

Väinö *built* a/the house.

**Väinö rakentaa talo/a.**

Väinö *is building* a/the house.

**Väinö rakentaa talo/n.**

Väinö *will build* a/the house.



**Hän ajaa auto/a.**He/she *is driving* a/the car.**Hän ajaa auto/n talliin.**He/she *drives* the car into the garage.**Presidentti ampui lintu/a.**The president *shot at* (or: *shot and wounded*) a/the bird.**Presidentti ampui linnu/n.**The president *shot (and killed)* a/the bird.**Kalle lämmittää sauna/a.**Kalle *is warming up* the sauna.**Kalle lämmittää sauna/n.**Kalle *will warm up* the sauna.

Many verbs are intrinsically irresultative, and their objects are thus generally in the partitive. One important group of such verbs is those expressing an emotion or state of mind.

<b>rakasta/a</b>	love	<b>vihat/a</b>	hate
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	<b>kaivat/a</b>	miss, long for
<b>kunnioitta/a</b>	honour	<b>sur/ra</b>	grieve
<b>arvosta/a</b>	value	<b>valitta/a</b>	complain
<b>katu/a</b>	regret	<b>sääli/ä</b>	pity
<b>kiittä/ä</b>	thank	<b>harrasta/a</b>	be interested in
<b>kiinnosta/a</b>	interest	<b>huvitta/a</b>	amuse
<b>miellyttä/ä</b>	please	<b>moitti/a</b>	blame
<b>arvostel/la</b>	criticize	<b>haukku/a</b>	scold
<b>loukat/a</b>	insult	<b>syyttä/ä</b>	accuse
<b>uhat/a</b>	threaten	<b>kiusat/a</b>	annoy

(2)(b) The object of verbs of emotion is in the partitive.

**Minä rakastan sinu/a!**I love *you!***Rakastan tuolta nais/ta.**I love *that woman.***Suomi kiinnostaa minu/a.**Finland interests *me.***Pelkäätkö koir/i/a?**Are you afraid of *dogs?***Ahtisaari kiitti hallitus/ta.**Ahtisaari thanked *the government.***Säälin hän/tä.**I pity *him/her.***Tauno kaipaa jo/ta/kin uut/ta.**Tauno longs for *something new.*

There are also other verbs which have an irresultative meaning and therefore very often take the partitive object. 3

<b>jatka/a</b>	continue	<b>puolusta/a</b>	defend
<b>verrat/a</b>	compare	<b>seurat/a</b>	follow
<b>ehdotta/a</b>	suggest	<b>tarkoitta/a</b>	mean
<b>vastusta/a</b>	oppose	<b>vaikeutta/a</b>	make difficult
<b>edusta/a</b>	represent	<b>korosta/a</b>	emphasize
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	<b>heikentä/ä</b>	weaken

<b>Ajattelen sinu/a.</b>	I think of <i>you</i> .
<b>Keihänen jatkoi tominta/a.</b>	Keihänen continued <i>his business</i> .
<b>Joku seuraa minu/a.</b>	Someone is following <i>me</i> .
<b>Voiko suome/a verrata ruotsiin?</b>	Can one compare <i>Finnish</i> to Swedish?
<b>Mitä sinä tarkoitat?</b>	<i>What</i> do you mean?
<b>Lipponen edustaa sosialidemokraatte/j/a.</b>	Lipponen represents <i>the Social Democrats</i> .

- (3) The object is in the partitive when it expresses an indefinite, non-limited quantity (divisible words and plural words).

*Partitive object*  
(indefinite quantity)

**Ostan jäätelö/ä.**  
I('ll) buy *some ice-cream*.

**Pekka juo olut/ta.**  
Pekka drinks *beer/is drinking (some) beer*.

**Opitko suome/a?**  
Are you learning *(some) Finnish*?  
(Also: Did you learn...)

**Näen ihmis/i/ä.**  
I see *(some) people*.

**Tuula tapaa vierai/ta.**  
Tuula meets/is meeting *some guests*.

**Nieminen myy metsä/ä.**  
Nieminen sells/is selling *some forest*.

*Accusative object*  
(definite quantity)

**Ostan jäätelö/n.**  
I('ll) buy *an/the ice-cream*.

**Pekka juo olue/n.**  
Pekka (will) drink *a/the beer*.

**Opin suomen kiele/n.**  
I learned *the Finnish language*.

**Näen ihmiset.**  
I see *the people*.

**Tuula tapaa vieraat.**  
Tuula meets *the guests*.

**Nieminen myy metsä/n.**  
Nieminen sells/will sell *the forest*.

### §33.3 PARTITIVE COMPLEMENT

A complement is a constituent occurring after the verb **olla**, expressing some characteristic of the subject, e.g. **nainen** and **mukava** in the sentences **Marketta on nainen** 'Marketta is a woman' and **Marketta on mukava** 'Marketta is nice'. The cases of the complement are nominative and partitive, and occasionally also genitive (e.g. **Auto on minu/n** 'The car is mine'). When the complement is an adjective the following rules hold.

A singular adjective complement (i.e. a predicative adjective) is in the partitive when the subject is divisible.

<b>Maito on valkois/ta.</b>	(The) milk is <i>white</i> .
<b>Rauta on kova/a.</b>	(The) iron is <i>hard</i> .
<b>Kahvi on kuuma/a.</b>	(The) coffee is <i>hot</i> .

<b>Tämä on merkillis/tä.</b>	This is <i>peculiar</i> .
<b>Musiikki on kaunis/ta.</b>	(The) music is <i>beautiful</i> .
<b>Rehellisyys on harvinais/ta.</b>	Honesty is <i>rare</i> .
<b>Uiminen on hauska/a.</b>	Swimming is <i>nice</i> .

When the subject is non-divisible, the adjective complement is normally in the nominative.

<b>Heidän koiransa on valkoinen.</b>	Their dog is <i>white</i> .
<b>Tämä pala on kova.</b>	This bit is <i>hard</i> .
<b>Kuppi on kuuma.</b>	The cup is <i>hot</i> .
<b>Hän on merkillinen.</b>	He/she is <i>funny</i> .
<b>Autoni ei ole kaunis.</b>	My car is not <i>beautiful</i> .

An adjective complement is also in the partitive when the subject is an infinitive or a subordinate clause, or when there is no subject.

<b>On ilmeis/ tä, että...</b>	It is <i>clear</i> that...
<b>On paras/ta lähteä.</b>	It is <i>best</i> to leave.
<b>Luennolla oli hauska/a.</b>	It was <i>nice</i> at the lecture. ( <i>lit.</i> 'At the lecture was nice.')

With some adjectives both nominative and partitive are equally possible as complement cases; often the nominative is better.

<b>Minun on vaikea(a) tulla.</b>	It is <i>difficult</i> for me to come.
<b>Oli hauska(a) tutustua.</b>	It was <i>nice</i> to meet (you).
<b>Ei ole helppo(a) päättää.</b>	It is not <i>easy</i> to decide.

If the subject is plural, the adjective complement must also be in the plural (concord), and is usually in the partitive plural. But the nominative plural is often equally possible; this form is obligatory if the subject is a plural invariable word (§26) or if the concept referred to by the subject is clearly of limited scope.

A plural adjective complement (predicative adjective) is generally in the partitive, but it takes the nominative if the subject is an invariable plural or refers to a clearly limited concept.

<b>Oletteko ilois/i/a?</b>	Are you (pl.) <i>glad</i> ?
<b>Omenat ovat tanskalais/i/a.</b>	The apples are <i>Danish</i> .
<b>Nämä kirjat ovat kalli/i/ta.</b>	These books are <i>expensive</i> .
<b>Tulppaanit ovat punais/i/a.</b>	The tulips are <i>red</i> .
<b>He ovat miellyttäv/i/ä.</b>	They are <i>pleasant</i> .
<b>Voileivät ovat hyv/i/ä.</b>	The sandwiches are <i>good</i> .

In sentences like the above the nominative is also possible: **Nämä kirjat ovat kallii/t; Tulppaanit ovat punaise/t; Voileivät ovat hyvä/t.** In the following examples, however, the nominative is obligatory; the subject is either an invariable plural or a word referring to a part of the body.

<b>Jalat ovat likaise/t.</b>	The feet are <i>dirty</i> .
<b>Saappaat ovat pitkät/t.</b>	The boots are <i>tall</i> .
<b>Kasvot olivat valkoise/t.</b>	The face was <i>white</i> .
<b>Sakset ovat terävä/t.</b>	The scissors are <i>sharp</i> .
<b>Housut ovat harmaa/t.</b>	The trousers are <i>grey</i> .

Noun complements can also be either nominative or partitive.

A noun complement is in the partitive when it expresses an indefinite quantity of a substance, group or species.

<b>Oletteko ruotsalais/i/a?</b>	Are you (pl.) <i>Swedish</i> ?
<b>Olemme suomalais/i/a.</b>	We are <i>Finnish</i> .
<b>He ovat nais/i/a.</b>	They are <i>women</i> .
<b>Tuoli on puu/ta.</b>	The chair is (made) <i>of wood</i> .
<b>Paitani on villa/a.</b>	My shirt is (made) <i>of wool</i> .
<b>Aika on raha/a.</b>	Time is <i>money</i> .
<b>Tämä on punaviini/ä.</b>	This is <i>red wine</i> .

The noun complement is otherwise in the nominative when it is a non-divisible word and refers to a definite quantity.

<b>Keijo on mies.</b>	Keijo is <i>a man</i> .
<b>Tämä on auto.</b>	This is <i>a car</i> .
<b>Olavi Järvinen on lääkäri.</b>	Olavi Järvinen is <i>a doctor</i> .
<b>Tässä on viini!</b>	This ( <i>lit.</i> 'here') is <i>(the) wine!</i>

### §33.4 THE PARTITIVE IN EXPRESSIONS OF QUANTITY

The partitive is used in expressions of quantity, i.e. after numerals and words like **monta** 'many', **paljon** 'much', **vähän** '(a) little, few' (except when the numeral is inflected, see §52.2).

The partitive singular is used after numerals (except **yksi** 'one').

<b>yksi tyttö</b>	one girl
<b>kaksi tyttö/ä</b>	two girls
<b>viisi tyttö/ä</b>	five girls
<b>neljä maa/ta</b>	four countries
<b>yhdeksän vene/ttä</b>	nine boats
<b>kaksikymmentä kirja/a</b>	twenty books
<b>sata mies/tä</b>	a hundred men
<b>monta nais/ta</b>	many women

After other expressions of quantity the partitive singular is used for divisible words and the partitive plural for non-divisible words.

<b>vähän maito/a</b>	(a) little milk
<b>vähän auto/j/a</b>	few cars
<b>paljon olut/ta</b>	much beer

<b>puoli tunti/a</b>	half an hour
<b>kuppi kuuma/a kahvi/a</b>	a cup of hot coffee
<b>kaksi kuppi/a kylmä/ä tee/tä</b>	two cups of cold tea
<b>lasi punaviini/ä</b>	a glass of red wine
<b>kilo omeno/i/ta</b>	a kilo of apples
<b>kaksi kilo/a appelsiine/j/a</b>	two kilos of oranges
<b>joukko ihmis/i/ä</b>	a crowd of people
<b>pari kenk/i/ä</b>	a pair of shoes
<b>pala leipä/ä</b>	a bit of bread
<b>pussi sokeri/a</b>	a bag of sugar

If the numeral expression is the subject of the sentence, the finite verb is then in the third person singular.

**Kaksi miestä kulke/e kadulla.** Two men *walk/are walking* in the street.  
(Compare: **Miehet kulke/vat kadulla.** The men *walk/are walking* in the street.)

**Neljä pääministeriä kokoontu/u Helsinkiin.** Four prime ministers *meet/are meeting* in Helsinki.  
(Compare: **Pääministerit kokoontu/vat Helsinkiin.** The prime ministers *meet/are meeting* in Helsinki.)

If the numeral is in a case other than the nominative, the whole phrase of which the numeral is a part must be in the same case (concord, §52.2).

**Ajamme Helsinkiin kahde/lla auto/lla.**  
We drive/are driving to Helsinki *in two cars*.

**Minulla ei ole kolme/a velje/ä.**  
I don't have *three brothers*.

**Kirjoitin kirjan kuude/ssa viiko/ssa.**  
I wrote *a/the book in six weeks*.

### §33.5 THE PARTITIVE WITH PRE- AND POSTPOSITIONS

There are several prepositions and a few postpositions which require the partitive for the word they modify, e.g. the prepositions **lähellä** 'near', **ilman** 'without', **ennen** 'before', **pitkin** 'along', **kohti** 'towards', **vasten** 'against', and the postpositions **kohtaan** 'towards', **varten** 'for'.

**Tuletko kotiin ennen joulu/a?** Are you coming home *before* Christmas?

**Pertti selviää ilman auto/a.** Pertti manages *without* a car.

**He kävelivät pitkin silta/a.** They walked *along* the bridge.

**Tunnen sääliä sinu/a kohtaan.** I feel pity *for* (lit. 'towards') you.

**Tä/tä varten olemme tulleet.** This is what we have come *for*.  
(lit. 'For this we have come.')

# 9 THE GENITIVE, POSSESSIVE SUFFIXES AND THE ACCUSATIVE

- *Formation of the genitive*
- *Use of the genitive*
- *Possessive suffixes*
- *What is the accusative?*
- *The accusative endings*
- *Quantity adverbs taking an object case*

This chapter deals with two cases, the genitive and the accusative, and also the possessive suffixes, which are a class of endings distinct from case forms. The accusative is not really a case form proper but a collective name for certain cases used for the object (nominative, genitive and **-t** accusative) which are in opposition to the partitive. The genitive and the possessive suffixes are related since they both often express possession.

## §34 FORMATION OF THE GENITIVE

### §34.1 GENITIVE SINGULAR

The genitive singular ending is always **-n**, which is added to the inflectional stem. As the genitive ending consists of only one consonant, it usually causes consonant gradation (weak grade) in the inflectional stem (§15). This does not apply to nominals ending in **-e** (§19), nor to some ending in a consonant (§20), where the basic form and the partitive singular take the weak grade and other cases the strong grade.

The genitive singular ending is **-n**, which is added to the inflectional stem.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Genitive</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>
<b>Rauno</b>	(masculine name)	Rauno/ <b>n</b>	–
<b>puu</b>	tree, wood	puu/ <b>n</b>	–
<b>Suvikki</b>	(feminine name)	Suviki/ <b>n</b>	–
<b>Kaisu</b>	(feminine name)	Kaisu/ <b>n</b>	–

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Genitive</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>
<b>teltta</b> <sup>˘</sup>	tent	telta/ <u>n</u>	–
<b>tunti</b>	hour	tunni/ <u>n</u>	–
<b>onni</b>	luck	onne/ <u>n</u>	18.2
<b>Suomi</b>	Finland	Suome/ <u>n</u>	18.2
<b>saari</b>	island	saare/ <u>n</u>	18.3
<b>tuli</b>	fire	tule/ <u>n</u>	18.3
<b>käsi</b>	hand	käde/ <u>n</u>	18.4
<b>varsi</b>	handle	varre/ <u>n</u>	18.4
<b>laite</b>	appliance	laittee/ <u>n</u>	19
<b>kone</b>	machine	konee/ <u>n</u>	19
<b>Järvinen</b>	(surname)	Järvise/ <u>n</u>	20.1
<b>toinen</b>	other	toise/ <u>n</u>	20.1
<b>teos</b>	work	teokse/ <u>n</u>	20.2
<b>tehdas</b>	factory	tehtaa/ <u>n</u>	20.3
<b>taivas</b>	heaven, sky	taivaa/ <u>n</u>	20.3
<b>rakkaus</b>	love	rakkaude/ <u>n</u>	20.4
<b>puhelin</b>	telephone	puhelime/ <u>n</u>	20.5
<b>isätön</b>	fatherless	isättömä/ <u>n</u>	20.6
<b>sävel</b>	tune	sävele/ <u>n</u>	20.7
<b>mies</b>	man	miehe/ <u>n</u>	20.8
<b>kevät</b>	spring	kevää/ <u>n</u>	20.8

If the genitive singular of nominals is known, the inflectional stem can always be found by removing the **-n** ending. Most other case forms are formed by adding the necessary number and case endings to this stem.

### §34.2 GENITIVE PLURAL

The genitive plural is the most complex of the Finnish case forms. The most common endings are **-den** (which can always be changed to **-tten**) and **-en**, which are normally added after the ending **-i-** of the plural stem (§16, §26). In some declension types the ending **-ten** is also used, added to the consonant stem of the singular (especially in **ihminen** words, §20.1). It is usually worth comparing the formation of the genitive plural with that of the partitive plural.

The genitive plural ending is **-den** if the partitive plural ending is **-ta ~ -tä** (i.e. if the inflectional stem ends in two vowels, and also in some monosyllabic words, §32.2).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i> ( <i>gen. sing.</i> )	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>	<i>Genitive plural</i>
<b>maa</b>	country	maa/n	–	ma/i/ta	ma/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>puu</b>	tree, wood	puu/n	–	pu/i/ta	pu/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>vapaa</b>	free	vapaa/n	–	vapa/i/ta	vapa/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>este</b>	obstacle	estee/n	19	este/i/tä	este/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>peite</b>	cover	peittee/n	19	peitte/i/tä	peitte/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>hammas</b>	tooth	hampaa/n	20.3	hampa/i/ta	hampa/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>hidas</b>	slow	hitaa/n	20.3	hita/i/ta	hita/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>korkea</b>	high	korkea/n	–	korke/i/ta	korke/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>tärkeä</b>	important	tärkeä/n	–	tärke/i/tä	tärke/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>asia</b>	matter	asia/n	–	asio/i/ta	asio/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>lukija</b>	reader	lukija/n	–	lukijo/i/ta	lukijo/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>tavara</b>	thing	tavara/n	–	tavaro/i/ta	tavaro/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>peruna</b>	potato	peruna/n	–	peruno/i/ta	peruno/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>ankkuri</b>	anchor	ankkuri/n	–	ankkure/i/ta	ankkure/i/ <b>den</b> (~ankkuri/ <b>en</b> )
<b>kukkula</b>	hill	kukkula/n	–	kukkulo/i/ta	kukkulo/i/ <b>den</b>

The ending **-den** can always be replaced by the ending **-tten**.

Compare **ma/i/den** ~ **ma/i/tten**, **este/i/den** ~ **este/i/tten**, **korke/i/den** ~ **korke/i/tten**, etc.

The genitive plural ending is **-en** if the partitive plural ending is **-a** ~ **-ä** (i.e. if the inflectional stem ends in a consonant followed by a short vowel, and also in some polysyllabic words, §32.2).

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i> ( <i>gen. sing.</i> )	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>	<i>Genitive plural</i>
<b>katto</b>	roof	kato/n	–	katto/j/a	katto/j/ <b>en</b>
<b>karhu</b>	bear	karhu/n	–	karhu/j/a	karhu/j/ <b>en</b>
<b>kala</b>	fish	kala/n	–	kalo/j/a	kalo/j/ <b>en</b>
<b>muna</b>	egg	muna/n	–	mun/i/a	mun/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>isä</b>	father	isä/n	–	is/i/ä	is/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>tunti</b>	hour	tunni/n	–	tunte/j/a	tunti/ <b>en</b>
<b>lasi</b>	glass	lasi/n	–	lase/j/a	lasi/ <b>en</b>
<b>ovi</b>	door	ove/n	18.2	ov/i/a	ov/i/ <b>en</b>



<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i> ( <i>gen. sing.</i> )	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Partitive plural</i>	<i>Genitive plural</i>
<b>kaikki</b>	all	kaike/n	18.2	kaikk/i/a	kaikk/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>kieli</b>	language	kiele/n	18.3	kiel/i/ä	kiel/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>sieni</b>	mushroom	siene/n	18.3	sien/i/ä	sien/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>käsi</b>	hand	käde/n	18.4	käs/i/ä	käs/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>viisi</b>	five	viide/n	18.4	viis/i/ä	viis/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>hevonen</b>	horse	hevose/n	20.1	hevos/i/a	hevos/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>nainen</b>	woman	naise/n	20.1	nais/i/a	nais/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>kokous</b>	meeting	kokoukse/n	20.2	kokouks/i/a	kokouks/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>sormus</b>	ring	sormukse/n	20.2	sormuks/i/a	sormuks/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>totuus</b>	truth	totuude/n	20.4	totuuks/i/a	totuuks/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>vaikeus</b>	difficulty	vaikeude/n	20.4	vaikeuks/i/a	vaikeuks/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>avain</b>	key	avaime/n	20.5	avaim/i/a	avaim/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>työtön</b>	unemployed	työttömä/n	20.6	työttöm/i/ä	työttöm/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>askel</b>	pace	askele/n	20.7	askel/i/a	askel/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>mies</b>	man	miehe/n	20.8	mieh/i/ä	mieh/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>hedelmä</b>	fruit	hedelmä/n	–	hedelm/i/ä	hedelm/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>sopiva</b>	suitable	sopiva/n	–	sopiv/i/a	sopiv/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>hämärä</b>	dim	hämärä/n	–	hämär/i/ä	hämär/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>asema</b>	station	asema/n	–	asem/i/a	asem/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>opettaja</b>	teacher	opettaja/n	–	opettaj/i/a	opettaj/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>aurinko</b>	sun	auringo/n	–	aurinko/j/a	aurinko/j/ <b>en</b>
<b>ammatti</b>	profession	ammatti/n	–	ammatte/j/a	ammatti/ <b>en</b>
<b>päällikkö</b>	chief	päällikkö/n	–	päällikkö/j/ä	päällikkö/j/ <b>en</b>

In many words of three or more syllables both **-den** and **-en** are possible, but in some words the effect of consonant gradation must then be noted: **päällikkö/i/den** ~ **päällikkö/j/en**, **ammatti/i/den** ~ **ammatti/en**, **ankkuri/i/den** ~ **ankkuri/en**.

Sometimes the genitive plural can also be formed using the ending **-ten**, which is added to a basic form ending in a consonant (§32.1, group (c)), or to a consonant stem formed after the final vowel has been dropped (§32.1, group (b)). This ending is particularly common with **ihminen** words (§20.1).

Sometimes the genitive plural ending is **-ten**, which is added to a consonant stem.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Inflectional stem</i> ( <i>gen. sing.</i> )	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Genitive plural</i>	<i>Or (for most types seldom)</i>
<b>kieli</b>	language	kiele/n	18.3	kiel/ <b>ten</b>	~ kieli/ <b>en</b>
<b>pieni</b>	small	piene/n	18.3	pien/ <b>ten</b>	~ pieni/ <b>en</b>
<b>nuori</b>	young	nuore/n	18.3	nuor/ <b>ten</b>	~ nuori/ <b>en</b>
<b>nainen</b>	woman	naise/n	20.1	nais/ <b>ten</b>	~ (nais/i/ <b>en</b> )
<b>ruotsalainen</b>	Swedish	ruotsalaise/n	20.1	ruotsalais/ <b>ten</b>	~(ruotsalais/i/ <b>en</b> )
<b>ostos</b>	purchase	ostokse/n	20.2	ostos/ <b>ten</b>	~ ostoks/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>hammas</b>	tooth	hampaa/n	20.3	hammas/ <b>ten</b>	~ hampa/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>kallis</b>	expensive	kallii/n	20.3	kallis/ <b>ten</b>	~ kalli/i/ <b>den</b>
<b>puhelin</b>	telephone	puhelime/n	20.5	puhelin/ <b>ten</b>	~ puhelim/i/ <b>en</b>
<b>askel</b>	pace	askele/n	20.7	askel/ <b>ten</b>	~ askeli/ <b>en</b>
<b>mies</b>	man	miehe/n	20.8	mies/ <b>ten</b>	~ mieh/i/ <b>en</b>

### §35 USE OF THE GENITIVE

The genitive often marks the possessor, belonging to someone or something, or origin.

***Presidenti/n nimi on Ahtisaari.***

*The President's name is Ahtisaari.*

***Auli/n auto on keltainen.***

*Auli's car is yellow.*

***Ihmise/n elämä on lyhyt.***

*Man's life is short.*

***Kaarle Kustaa on ruotsalais/ten kuningas.***

*Carl Gustaf is the King of the Swedes.*

***Oletko juonut Aura/n olutta?***

*Have you drunk Aura beer?*

***Mies/ten vaatteet ovat pohjakerroksessa.***

*Men's clothes are on the ground floor.*

***Öljyma/i/den politiikka kovenee.***

*The policies of the oil countries are getting tougher.*

***Kirjoj/en sisältö on muuttunut.***

*The content of (the) books has changed.*

Genitive expressions like the following are typical to Finnish; in many European languages the corresponding forms are preposition or adjective structures or compound nouns.

<b>Turu/n kaupunki</b>	the city of <i>Turku</i>
<b>Helsinki/n yliopisto</b>	<i>Helsinki</i> University
<b>englanni/n kieli</b>	the <i>English</i> language
<b>Venäjä/n ulkoministeri</b>	the Foreign Minister of <i>Russia</i>
<b>Summa/n taistelut</b>	the battles of <i>Summa</i>
<b>Niemise/n perhe</b>	the <i>Nieminen</i> family
<b>Virtase/n Reino</b>	<i>Reino Virtanen</i> (colloquial)
<b>Lapi/n mies</b>	a man from <i>Lapland</i>
<b>maido/n hinta</b>	the price of <i>milk</i>
<b>Suome/n kansa</b>	the <i>Finnish</i> people
<b>Pohjoisma/i/den neuvosto</b>	the Council of the <i>Nordic Countries</i>
<b>Ranska/n vallankumous</b>	the <i>French</i> Revolution
<b>kadu/n mies</b>	the man in the <i>street</i>
<b>ruotsi/n kiele/n opettaja</b>	a <i>Swedish</i> language teacher
<b>Espanja/n matka</b>	a trip to <i>Spain</i>

The genitive is the case of the subject with some verbs of necessity or obligation (**täytyy** ‘must’, **on pakko** ‘have to’, etc.), and some verbs with a modal meaning (e.g. **kannattaa** ‘be worth (doing sth.)’, **sopii** ‘may’, **onnistuu** ‘succeed’).

<b>Minu/n täytyy lähteä.</b>	<i>I</i> must leave.
<b>He/i/dän täytyy lähteä.</b>	<i>They</i> must leave.
<b>Saksalais/ten täytyy lähteä.</b>	<i>The Germans</i> must leave.
<b>Suome/n kannattaa yrittää.</b>	It is worth <i>Finland</i> trying.
<b>Vireni/n onnistui voittaa.</b>	<i>Viren</i> succeeded in winning.
<b>Mies/ten on pakko poistua.</b>	<i>The men</i> have to go away.
<b>Sinu/n ei pidä uskoa kaikkea.</b>	<i>You</i> must not believe everything.

(In traditional Finnish grammar these genitives are not always analysed as subjects, but are called dative adverbials. The two basic subject cases are nominative and partitive (§25.3, §33.1).)

The genitive is also the case of the subject (traditionally: the dative adverbial) in expressions like **on hyvä** ‘be good’, **on paha** ‘be bad’ and **on hauska** ‘be nice’.

<b>Minu/n on hyvä olla.</b>	<i>I</i> feel good.
<b>Mauno/n oli hauska päästä kotiin.</b>	It was nice for <i>Mauno</i> to get home.
<b>Suomalais/ten oli paha palata.</b>	<i>The Finns</i> felt bad about returning.
<b>Mikä Tuula/n on?</b>	What’s up with <i>Tuula</i> ?

The subjects of many participle and infinitive constructions also appear in the genitive.

<b>Talve/n tullessa...</b>	When <i>winter</i> comes...(lit. ‘Winter coming...’)
<b>Kesä/n tultua...</b>	<i>Spring</i> having come...

<b>kaikk/i/en</b> <b>tuntema kirjailija</b>	a writer known <i>by everyone</i>
<b>Näin Ulla/n tulevan.</b>	I saw <i>Ulla</i> coming.
<b>Huomasin Kalle/n tulleen.</b>	I noticed <i>Kalle</i> had come.

And finally, many postpositions require the genitive for the headwords they modify.

<b>pöydä/n</b> <b>alla</b>	<i>under</i> the table
<b>kesä/n</b> <b>aikana</b>	<i>during</i> the summer
<b>auto/n</b> <b>jäljessä</b>	<i>after</i> the car
<b>huonee/n</b> <b>keskellä</b>	<i>in the middle of</i> the room
<b>äidi/n</b> <b>luo</b>	<i>to</i> mother
<b>Virolaise/n</b> <b>mielestä</b>	<i>in Virolainen's</i> opinion
<b>talo/n</b> <b>sisällä</b>	<i>inside</i> the house
<b>raha/n</b> <b>tähden</b>	<i>for the sake of</i> money
<b>isä/n</b> <b>vieressä</b>	<i>next to</i> father
<b>tämä/n</b> <b>yhteydessä</b>	<i>in connection with</i> this
<b>tori/n</b> <b>ympäriällä</b>	<i>around</i> the market place

### §36 POSSESSIVE SUFFIXES

Finnish does not have independent possessive pronouns as such, marking possession for the different grammatical persons; this function is fulfilled by the genitive forms of the personal pronouns.

<b>minä</b>	I	<b>minu/n</b>	my
<b>sinä</b>	you (sing.)	<b>sinu/n</b>	your (sing.)
<b>hän</b>	he, she	<b>häne/n</b>	his, her
<b>me</b>	we	<b>mei/dän</b>	our
<b>te</b>	you (pl.)	<b>tei/dän</b>	your (pl.)
<b>he</b>	they	<b>hei/dän</b>	their

The word signifying what is possessed also takes an ending, a possessive suffix, which varies with the person (concord; third person singular and plural have the same ending).

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>First person</i>	<b>-ni</b>	<b>-mme</b>
<i>Second person</i>	<b>-si</b>	<b>-nne</b>
<i>Third person</i>	<b>-nsa ~ -nsä</b>	<b>-nsa ~ -nsä</b>

Genitive personal pronouns in the first and second persons can be omitted when they occur together with a possessive suffix.

(minun) <b>velje/ni</b>	my brother
(minun) <b>äiti/ni</b>	my mother
(sinun) <b>sisare/si</b>	your sister
<b>hänen poika/nsa</b>	his/her son
<b>hänen isä/nsä</b>	his/her father
(meidän) <b>talo/mme</b>	our house
(meidän) <b>perhee/mme</b>	our family
(teidän) <b>paikka/nne</b>	your place
(teidän) <b>kirja/nne</b>	your book
<b>heidän talo/nsa</b>	their house
<b>heidän ystävä/nsä</b>	their friend

The omission of the first and second person pronouns is particularly common when the person is identical with that of the subject of the sentence and the possessive expression has another function (e.g. object).

<b>Otan kirja/ni.</b>	I('ll) take <i>my book</i> .
<b>Myyttekö auto/nne?</b>	Are you selling <i>your car</i> ?
<b>Löydätkö avaimesi?</b>	Can you find <i>your key</i> ?
<b>Teemme parhaa/mme.</b>	We are doing <i>our best</i> .
<b>Emme muuta asunno/sta/mme.</b>	We are not moving <i>out of our flat</i> .

Third person pronouns can normally only be omitted when they have the same reference as the subject of the sentence; they then correspond to possessive pronouns in many other languages.

<b>Hän ajaa auto/nsa kotiin.</b>	He drives <i>his car</i> home.
<b>Kalle ajaa auto/nsa kotiin.</b>	Kalle drives <i>his car</i> home.
<b>He juovat olue/nsa.</b>	They drink <i>their beer</i> .
<b>Miehet juovat olue/nsa.</b>	The men drink <i>their beer</i> .
<b>Presidentti lähtee linna/a/nsa.</b>	The President goes to <i>his palace</i> .

Compare the following sentences where the third person pronoun does not refer back to the subject.

**Kalle ajaa hänen auto/nsa kotiin.**  
Kalle drives *his/her car* home (i.e. *someone else's car*).

**Amerikkalaiset tapaavat heidän edustaja/nsa.**  
The Americans meet *their representatives* (not their own but e.g. the other side's).

Within the word, possessive suffixes always occur after case endings but before enclitic particles.

<b>auto/lla/ni</b>	with <i>my</i> car
<b>auto/sta/si</b>	out of <i>your</i> car
<b>maa/ta/mme</b>	<i>our</i> country (part.)
<b>poika/nne/kin</b>	<i>your</i> son too
<b>äidi/ltä/ni/hän</b>	from <i>my</i> mother+emphasis
<b>isä/lle/si/kö</b>	to <i>your</i> father?

When a possessive suffix occurs after a case form ending in a consonant the following alternation takes place:

The final consonant of a case ending is dropped when followed by a possessive suffix.

This deletion particularly applies to the genitive singular ending **-n**, the genitive plural endings **-iden ~ -itten ~ -en ~ -ten**, the nominative plural ending **-t** and the illative endings **-Vn ~ -hVn ~ -seen ~ -siin**.

<i>Root+case</i>		<i>Root+case+possessive suffix</i>	
<b>laiva/n</b>	of the ship	<b>laiva/ /ni</b>	my ship's
<b>tyttö/n</b>	of the girl	<b>tyttö/ /mme</b>	our girl's
<b>talo/t</b>	the houses	<b>talo/ /nne</b>	your houses
<b>lauku/t</b>	the bags	<b>lauku/ /si</b>	your bags
<b>auto/on</b>	into the car	<b>auto/o/ni</b>	into my car
<b>maa/han</b>	into the country	<b>maa/ha/nsa</b>	into his country

Note especially that on account of this dropping of the final consonant several case forms look the same when followed by a possessive suffix: nominative singular and plural, and genitive singular.

<b>Veneeni on uusi.</b>	<i>My boat</i> is new.
<b>Veneeni ovat uudet.</b>	<i>My boats</i> are new.
<b>Veneeni nimi on Tarantella.</b>	<i>My boat's</i> name is Tarantella.
<b>Oletko nähnyt veneeni?</b>	Have you seen <i>my boat(s)</i> ?

Notice that it is the concord in the verb that differentiates the first two sentences above (**on** 'is' and **ovat** 'are').

It is apparent from what has been said so far that consonant gradation does not occur directly before a possessive suffix; cf. the inflection of the noun **laukku** 'bag'.

<b>(minun) laukku/ni</b>	<b>(meidan) laukku/mme</b>
<b>(sinun) laukku/si</b>	<b>(teidan) laukku/nne</b>
<b>hänen laukku/nsa</b>	<b>heidän laukku/nsa</b>

Because of the deletion of the final consonant, (**minun**) **laukku/ni** for instance may mean ‘my bag’, ‘my bags’, or ‘of my bag’.

In the nominative singular the possessive suffix is always added to the inflectional stem.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Inflectional stem</i>		<i>Cf. §</i>
	<i>+possessive suffix</i>		
<b>ovi</b>	<b>ove/mme</b>	our door	18.2
<b>ääni</b>	<b>ääne/si</b>	your voice	18.3
<b>käsi</b>	<b>käte/ni</b>	my hand	18.4
<b>kone</b>	<b>konee/nne</b>	your machine	19
<b>hevonen</b>	<b>hevose/nsa</b>	his/her/their horse	20.1
<b>kysymys</b>	<b>kysymykse/si</b>	your question	20.2
<b>kirves</b>	<b>kirvee/nsä</b>	his/her/their axe	20.3

If the third person possessive suffix occurs after a case ending in a short vowel, its form is usually **-Vn** (vowel + **-n**), where the vowel is identical with the immediately preceding vowel. The ending **-nsa** ~ **-nsä** is occasionally also possible with such forms, and it is always the ending used after cases other than those ending in a short vowel.

<b>heidän talo/ssa/an</b>	in their house
<b>hänen auto/lla/an</b>	with his/her car
<b>heidän isä/lle/en</b>	to their father
<b>hänen äidi/ltä/än</b>	from his/her mother
<b>äiti/ä/än</b>	his/her mother (part.)
<b>pää/tä/än</b>	his/her head (part.)
<b>maa/ta/an</b>	his/her country (part.)

Compare the following forms where the third person possessive suffix is not preceded by a case ending of the type defined above.

<b>heidän talo/o/nsa</b>	into their house (illat.)
<b>hänen auto/nsa</b>	his/her car (nom. or gen.)
<b>heidän isä/ä/nsä</b>	their father (part, or illat.)
<b>hänen äiti/nsä</b>	his/her mother (nom. or gen.)

### §37 WHAT IS THE ACCUSATIVE?

The accusative is not a uniform morphological case form as such, but a collective name given to a certain set of cases when they mark the object of the sentence. These cases are: nominative singular, which of course has no ending ( $\emptyset$ ); genitive singular, with the ending **-n**; the **-t** accusative ending peculiar to personal pronouns; and the nominative plural in **-t**. The accusative, i.e. this set of case forms, appears as the case of the object in opposition to the partitive.

When determining the particular case of the object one must first check whether any of the conditions for the partitive hold (§33.2); if so, the object must be in the partitive. The partitive is thus a ‘stronger’ object case than the accusative. Only after this, if none of the partitive object conditions are fulfilled, can one proceed to determine which of the accusative endings is the correct one.

The object is in the partitive if any of the partitive conditions (§33.2) hold; if not, the object takes one of the accusative endings (Ø, **-n**, **-t**).

The partitive object occurs in three instances: (a) in negative sentences, (b) when the action expressed by the verb is irresultative, and (c) when the object expresses an indefinite quantity.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| (a) <b>En tunne tuo/ta mies/tä.</b><br><b>Risto ei lue sanomalehte/ä.</b> | I don’t know <i>that man</i> .<br>Risto does not read <i>the newspaper</i> .               |
| (b) <b>Reino lukee hyvä/ä kirja/a.</b><br><b>He katsovat ottelu/a.</b>    | Reino is reading <i>a good book</i> .<br>They are watching <i>the match</i> .              |
| (c) <b>Opiskelemme suomen kielt/ä.</b><br><b>Ostatteko olut/ta?</b>       | We study/are studying the Finnish<br><i>language</i> .<br>Will you buy <i>(some) beer?</i> |

The case of the object is therefore accusative only if (a) the sentence is affirmative, and also (b) the action of the verb is resultative, or (c) the object is a whole or a definite quantity. With respect to (c), the accusative may be compared to the nominative when the nominative marks the subject (§25.3).

The accusative expresses

- (a) resultative action
- (b) a whole or a definite quantity in affirmative sentences.

- | <i>Accusative object</i>  | <i>Partitive object</i>  |
|---|--|
| (a) <b>Tuula kirjoittaa kirjee/n.</b><br><b>Tuula kirjoittaa kirje/ttä.</b> | Tuula writes <i>a/the letter</i> .<br>Tuula is writing <i>a/the letter</i> . |
| <b>Hän kantoi kassi/n kotiin.</b><br><b>Hän kantoi kassi/a.</b>             | He carried <i>the bag</i> home.<br>He was carrying <i>a/the bag</i> .        |



**Suurensin valokuva/n.**

I enlarged *the photo* (e.g. to a given size).

(b) **Ostin leivä/n.**

I bought *the bread/a loaf of bread*.

**Syötkö kala/n?**

Will you eat *a/the fish*?<sup>1</sup>

**Tunnen ruotsalaiset/t.**

I know *the Swedes*.

**Suurensin valokuva/a.**

I was enlarging *a/the photo*.

Or: I enlarged *a/the photo* (a bit, but I could have made it bigger still).

**Ostin leipä/ä.**

I bought *some bread*.

**Syötkö kala/a?**

Do you eat *fish*?

**Tunnen ruotsalaisi/a.**

I know *some Swedes*.

All the accusative endings Ø, **-n** and **-t** share these basic meanings. The following section deals with the factors determining when each of these endings should be used.

### §38 THE ACCUSATIVE ENDINGS

When is each accusative ending used? We can formulate three rules:

- (1) The **-t** accusative always marks the object
- (a) in the plural
  - (b) in personal pronouns.

(1)(a) **Luen kirja/t.**

**Kansa valitsee**

*kansanedustaja/t.*

**Vien kirjeet postiin.**

**Isä vie lapse/t kouluun.**

**Vie lapse/t kouluun.**

**Lapse/t vietiin kouluun.**

**Tunnetko nämä maat?**

**Sylvi avasi ikkunat.**

**Hallitus korvaa vahingot.**

**Huomenna ostan uudet**

*kengät.*

**Minun täytyy ostaa kirjat.**

I'll read *the books*.

The people elect *the Members of Parliament*.

I will take *the letters* to the post.

Father takes *the children* to school.

Take *the children* to school.

*The children* were taken to school.

Do you know *these countries*?

Sylvi opened *the windows*.

The government will repay *the damage*.

Tomorrow I will buy a pair of *new shoes*.

I must buy *the books*.

<sup>1</sup> *Translator's note:* structures like this, with a present tense resultative verb+an accusative object, often correspond to the English future form with 'will' rather than the simple present, otherwise the resultative sense is lost. (Finnish has no equivalent future form.)

The use of the plural **-t** here follows exactly the same rules as the plural **-t** for the subject (§25.3).

When they function as the object, personal pronouns take the ending **-t**: **minu/t**, **sinu/t**, **häne/t**; **meidä/t**, **teidä/t**, **heidä/t**.

(1)(b) <b>Risto vei minu/t elokuviin.</b>	Risto took <i>me</i> to the cinema.
<b>Vie minu/t elokuviin!</b>	Take <i>me</i> to the cinema!
<b>Oletko nähnyt häne/t?</b>	Have you seen <i>him/her</i> ?
<b>Neiti Mäkinen saattaa teidä/t ovelle.</b>	Miss Mäkinen will escort <i>you</i> to the door.
<b>Saatanko sinu/t kotiin?</b>	Shall I take <i>you</i> home?
<b>Kyllä Tuula tuntee heidä/t.</b>	Tuula knows <i>them</i> all right.
<b>Tuo häne/t tänne!</b>	Bring <i>him/her</i> here!
<b>Minu/t vietiin elokuviin.</b>	<i>I</i> was taken to the cinema.

If the object is *singular* (and is not one of the personal pronouns **minä** : **minu/t**, **sinä** : **sinu/t**, **hän** : **häne/t**) there are two possibilities. Sometimes the ending is **-n**, and sometimes there is no ending (Ø). A singular object takes no ending if the predicate verb is first or second person imperative, passive, or a verb expressing obligation with a subject in the genitive (§35). Otherwise a singular object takes the ending **-n**.

- (2) A singular accusative object
- (a) usually takes **-n**
  - (b) takes no ending with verbs in first and second person imperative, passive verbs, and some verbs of obligation

<b>(Minä) ostan kirja/n.</b>	I will buy <i>a/the book</i> .
<b>Tunsitko Olli Nuutise/n?</b>	Did you know <i>Olli Nuutinen</i> ?
<b>Isä vie lapse/n kouluun.</b>	Father takes <i>the child</i> to school.
<b>Irma avaa ikkuna/n.</b>	Irma opens <i>the window</i> .
<b>Join kupi/n kahvia ja söin leivokse/n.</b>	I drank <i>a cup</i> of coffee and ate <i>a tart</i> .
<b>Hallitukse/n muodostaa Paavo Lipponen.</b>	<i>The government</i> is/will be formed by Paavo Lipponen.
<b>Ilkka ostaa sormukse/n vaimolleen.</b>	Ilkka will buy <i>a ring</i> for his wife.
<b>Pekka Pekkanen saa paika/n.</b>	Pekka Pekkanen gets/will get <i>the job</i> .
<b>Poliisit pysäyttävät liikentee/n.</b>	The police stop <i>the traffic</i> .
<b>Kommunistit esittävät uude/n ehdotukse/n.</b>	The communists put forward <i>a new proposal</i> .
<b>Rakennamme tehtaa/n Tampereelle.</b>	We (will) build <i>a/the factory</i> at Tampere.

<b>Osta kirja!</b>	Buy (sing.) <i>a book!</i>
<b>Ostakaa kirja!</b>	Buy (pl.) <i>a book!</i>
<b>Ostakaamme kirja!</b>	Let us buy <i>a book!</i>
<b>Kirjoita kirje loppuun!</b>	Finish writing <i>the letter!</i> ( <i>lit.</i> ‘Write the letter to the end!’)
<b>Viekkää koira pois!</b>	Take (pl.) <i>the dog</i> away!
<b>Ostettiin kirja.</b>	<i>A book</i> was bought. (‘One bought a book.’)
<b>Ostetaan kirja.</b>	Let’s buy <i>a book.</i> (‘One buys a book.’)
<b>Koira vietiin pois.</b>	<i>The dog</i> was taken away.
<b>Onko kirje kirjoitettu loppuun?</b>	Is <i>the letter</i> finished?
<b>Kalle Nieminen nähtiin viimeksi Kuopiossa.</b>	<i>Kalle Nieminen</i> was last seen in Kuopio.
<b>Minun täytyy ostaa kirja.</b>	I must buy <i>a/the book.</i>
<b>Sinun on pakko viedä kirje postiin.</b>	You have to take <i>the letter</i> to the post.
<b>Nyt koira on vietävä ulos.</b>	Now <i>the dog</i> must be taken out.
<b>Teidän pitäisi tavata Raija.</b>	You should meet <i>Raija.</i>
<b>Meidän täytyy hyväksyä tämä.</b>	We must accept <i>this.</i>

The third important accusative rule concerns numerals:

(3) Numerals (except **yksi** ‘one’) have no accusative ending.

<b>Kadulla näin kolme ihmistä.</b>	I saw <i>three</i> people in the street.
<b>Saanko kaksi tuoppia olutta?</b>	Can I have <i>two</i> tankards of beer?
<b>Väinö söi kuusi appelsiinia.</b>	Väinö ate <i>six</i> oranges.
<b>Kansa valitsee kaksisataa kansanedustajaa.</b>	The people elect <i>two hundred</i> Members of Parliament.

But:

<b>Saanko yhde/n kupi/n kahvia?</b>	Can I have <i>one cup</i> of coffee?
<b>Reijo lainaa yhde/n kirja/n.</b>	Reijo borrows <i>one book.</i>

Note once again the point made above (§36) concerning possessive suffixes: because of the omission of the final consonant some forms coincide.

<i>Without possessive suffix</i>	<i>With possessive suffix</i>
<b>Ostin auto/n.</b> I bought <i>a/the car.</i>	<b>Ostin auto/ni.</b> I bought <i>my car.</i>
<b>Ostin auto/t.</b> I bought <i>the cars.</i>	<b>Ostin auto/ni.</b> I bought <i>my cars.</i>
<b>Ostin auto/n moottorin.</b> I bought the engine <i>of the car.</i>	<b>Ostin auto/ni moottorin.</b> I bought the engine <i>of my car.</i>

In conclusion it should be stressed that the partitive rules always take precedence over the accusative rules. For example, in negative sentences the object is always in the partitive regardless of what the accusative ending would be in the corresponding affirmative sentences.

*Affirmative (accusative)*

**Luen kirja/t.**

I read *the books*.

**Tunnen nämä maa/t.**

I know *these countries*.

**Risto vie minu/t elokuviin.**

Risto will take *me* to the cinema.

**Näen häne/t.**

I see *him/her*.

**Ostan kirja/n.**

I (will) buy *a/the book*.

**Pekka Virtanen saa paika/n.**

Pekka Virtanen will get *the job*.

**Sinun on pakko viedä kirje  
postiin.**

You have to take *the letter* to  
the post.

**Pertti ostaa neljä vihkoa.**

Pertti buys/will buy *four*  
notebooks.

**Juotko kaksi kuppia kahvia?**

Will you drink *two* cups of coffee?

*Negative (partitive)*

**En lue kirjo/j/a.**

I don't read *books*.

**En tunne nä/i/tä ma/i/ta.**

I don't know *these countries*.

**Risto ei vie minu/a elokuviin.**

Risto will not take *me* to the cinema.

**En näe hän/tä.**

I don't see *him/her*.

**En osta kirja/a.**

I will not buy *a/the book*.

**Pekka Virtanen ei saa paikka/a.**

Pekka Virtanen will not get *the job*.

**Sinun ei ole pakko viedä kirje/ttä  
postiin.**

You do not have to take *the letter* to  
the post.

**Pertti ei osta neljä/ä vihkoa.**

Pertti does/will not buy *four*  
notebooks.

**Etkö juo kah/ta kuppia kahvia?**

Won't you drink *two* cups of coffee?

### §39 QUANTITY ADVERBS TAKING AN OBJECT CASE

There are some expressions of quantity which are similar to objects in that they take partitive or accusative endings in accordance with the normal rules for objects. These expressions include those answering the questions 'how long?', 'how far?', 'how many times?', and 'which time (in order)?'.

**Olen ollut Suomessa viiko/n.**

**En ole ollut Suomessa viikko/a.**

**Ole Suomessa viikko!**

**Suomessa ollaan viikko.**

I have been *a week* in Finland.

I have not been *a week* in Finland.

Stay *a week* in Finland!

We (*lit.* 'one') will stay *a week* in  
Finland.

**Viren juoksee kilometri/n.**

Viren will run *a kilometre*.

**Viren ei juokse kilometri/ä.**

Viren will not run *a kilometre*.

**Juokse kilometri!**

Run *a kilometre*!

**Olen nähnyt hänet kaksi kertaa.**

I have seen him/her *twice* ('two times').

**En ole nähnyt häntä kah/ta kertaa.**

I have not seen him/her *twice*.

# 10 THE SIX LOCAL CASES

- *General*
- *Inessive*
- *Elative*
- *Illative*
- *Ablative*
- *Allative*
- *Directional verbs*
- *Place names*

## §40 GENERAL

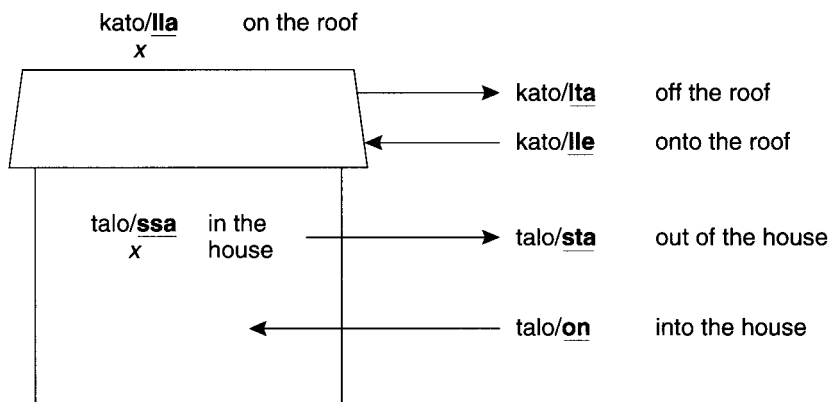
Six of the 15 Finnish cases form a sub-system of their own since their basic function is the expression of *place* and *direction*. This important set of local cases consists of the inessive **-ssa ~ -ssä**, the elative **-sta ~ -stä**, the illative **-Vn ~ -hVn ~ -seen ~ -siin** (where **V** stands for any vowel), the adessive **-lla ~ -llä**, the ablative **-ltä ~ -ltä** and the allative **-lle**.

The system of local cases is structured according to two dimensions. One is location: 'inside' (or in immediate contact with) vs. 'outside'. And the other is direction: 'static', 'movement towards' and 'movement away from'. The six cases can be set out as follows; the table includes only one variant for each case ending.

		<i>Location</i>	
		<i>Inside</i>	<i>Outside</i>
<i>Direction</i>	<i>Static</i>	<b>-ssa</b>	<b>-lla</b>
	<i>Away from</i>	<b>-sta</b>	<b>-lta</b>
	<i>Towards</i>	<b>-Vn</b>	<b>-lle</b>

The use of the local cases is illustrated in the house diagram below; *x* indicates 'static' location.

It must be remembered that the local cases also have many other meanings apart from place and direction. Some may express for example time, reason, instrument or manner.



### §41 INESSIVE

The inessive ending is **-ssa ~ -ssä**; in the singular this is added directly to the inflectional stem (§18–20), and in the plural it is added after the plural **-i-** following the inflectional stem (§26). Because the inessive ending begins with two consonants the rules of consonant gradation apply in the normal way (§15). In **vene** words (§19) and words with a basic form ending in a consonant (§20), the inflectional stem appears in the strong grade.

The basic meaning of the inessive is ‘location inside something’, sometimes ‘direct contact’.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Inessive singular</i>		<i>Inessive plural</i>	
<b>talo</b>	<b>talo/ssa</b>	in the house	<b>talo/i/ssa</b>	in the houses
<b>puu</b>	<b>puu/ssa</b>	in the tree	<b>pu/i/ssa</b>	in the trees
<b>maa</b>	<b>maa/ssa</b>	in the country	<b>ma/i/ssa</b>	in the countries
<b>tunti</b>	<b>tunni/ssa</b>	in the hour	<b>tunne/i/ssa</b>	in the hours
<b>kivi</b>	<b>kive/ssä</b>	in the stone	<b>kiv/i/ssä</b>	in the stones
<b>käsi</b>	<b>käde/ssä</b>	in the hand	<b>käs/i/ssä</b>	in the hands
<b>liike</b>	<b>liikkee/ssä</b>	in the shop	<b>liikke/i/ssä</b>	in the shops
<b>nainen</b>	<b>naise/ssa</b>	in the woman	<b>nais/i/ssa</b>	in the women
<b>ajatus</b>	<b>ajatukse/ssa</b>	in the thought	<b>ajatuks/i/ssa</b>	in the thoughts
<b>syvyys</b>	<b>syvyyde/ssä</b>	in the depth	<b>syvyyks/i/ssä</b>	in the depths
<b>avain</b>	<b>avaim/ssa</b>	in the key	<b>avaim/i/ssa</b>	in the keys

It is fairly rare for the inessive to mean ‘direct contact’, but there are a few common expressions of this kind.

**Minulla on sukat jala/ssa.**

I have socks on my feet (*lit. 'in the foot'*).

**Pekalla on hansikkaat käde/ssä.**

Pekka has gloves on his hands (*'in the hand'*).

**Venee/ssä on kaksi mastoa.**

The boat (*'in the boat'*) has two masts.

**Tuopi/ssa on korvat.**

The tankard (*'in the tankard'*) has handles.

**Onko sinulla hattu pää/ssä?**

Do you have a hat on your head (*'in the head'*)?

**Laiva on laituri/ssa.**

The ship is at (*'in'*) the quay.

The inessive is common in expressions of time, when it indicates the period of time during which an action takes place.

**Luin kirjan tunni/ssa.**

I read the book *in an hour*.

**Pimenee kymmene/ssä minuuti/ssa.**

It gets dark *in ten minutes*.

**Hän luki lääkäriksi viide/ssä vuode/ssa.**

He qualified as a doctor *in five years*.

**Päivä/ssä pääsee Helsingistä Kuopioon.**

One can get from Helsinki to Kuopio *in a day*.

**Tulen Norjaan ensi kuu/ssa.**

I'm coming to Norway *next month*.

Sometimes the inessive is used to mark a substance covering something.

**Talo on tule/ssa.**

The house is on (*'in'*) *fire*.

**Nenä oli vere/ssä.**

The nose was bloody (*'in blood'*).

**Aurajoki on jää/ssä.**

The river Aura is frozen (*'in ice'*).

**Lasi on huurtee/ssa.**

The glass is covered with frost (*'is in frost'*).

Concord rules apply in the normal way: pronouns and adjectival modifiers inflect in the same case and number as the headword (§31).

**iso/ssa talo/ssa**

in the big house

**tä/ssä talo/ssa**

in this house

**piene/ssä auto/ssa**

in the small car

**iso/i/ssa talo/i/ssa**

in the big houses

**tavallise/ssa liikkee/ssä**

in an ordinary shop



<b>tavallis/i/ssa liikke/i/ssä</b>	in ordinary shops
<b>toise/ssa maa/ssa</b>	in another country
<b>tois/i/ssa ma/i/ssa</b>	in other countries

## §42 ELATIVE

The elative ending is **-sta** ~ **-stä**, which is added to the inflectional stem and causes consonant gradation in the same way as the inessive. The basic meaning of the elative is ‘out from inside’.

The basic meaning of the elative is ‘out from inside’, sometimes ‘origin’ or ‘direction away from surface contact’.

Basic form	Elative singular		Elative plural
<b>talo</b>	<b>talo/sta</b>	out of the house	<b>talo/i/sta</b>
<b>maa</b>	<b>maa/sta</b>	out of the country	<b>ma/i/sta</b>
<b>kivi</b>	<b>kive/stä</b>	out of the stone	<b>kiv/i/stä</b>
<b>vesi</b>	<b>vede/stä</b>	out of the water	<b>ves/i/stä</b>
<b>ihminen</b>	<b>ihmise/stä</b>	out of the person	<b>ihmis/i/stä</b>
<b>tiede</b>	<b>tietee/stä</b>	out of science	<b>tiete/i/stä</b>

The sentences below illustrate this basic meaning.

**Sylvi nousee sängy/stä kello kahdeksan.**

Sylvi gets *out of bed* at eight o'clock.

**Noudan paketin posti/sta.**

I'll fetch the parcel *from the post office*.

**Mi/stä Teuvo tulee?**

Where does Teuvo come *from*?

**Hän tulee Kemi/stä.**

He comes *from Kemi*.

**Nousemme juna/sta satamassa.**

We get *out of the train* at the harbour.

**Älä juo olutta pullo/sta!**

Don't drink beer *from the bottle*!

**Pekka tulee koulu/sta.**

Pekka comes *from school*.

**Merimiehet karkasivat laiva/sta.**

The sailors deserted (*from*) *the ship*.

**Vesi loppuu kaivo/sta.**

The well runs out of water ('the water finishes *from the well*').

**Tulen hammaslääkäri/stä.**

I am coming *from the dentist*.

**Mi/stä löysit kynäsi?**

('From') *where* did you find your pen?

**Otan hatun pää/stä/ni.**

I take my hat *off my head*.

**Jyväskylä/stä Helsinkiin**

*from Jyväskylä to Helsinki*

**Johtaja on palannut Brasilia/sta.**

The director has returned *from Brazil*.

The elative is also often used for adverbials occurring after certain verbs. These verbs include those of speaking, writing, thinking, understanding, liking and knowing.

**Pentti kertoo matka/sta/an.**

Pentti tells *about his trip*.

**Hän puhuu kokemaks/i/sta/an.**

He speaks *of his experiences*.

**Mitä ajattelet Vennamo/sta?**

What do you think *of Vennamo*?

**Mitä luulet tä/stä?**

What do you think *of this*?

**En pidä musta/sta kahvi/sta.**

I don't like *black coffee*.

**Minä pidän Liisa/sta.**

I like *Liisa*.

**Mi/stä sen tiedät?**

How ('*from what*') do you know?

The elative can also indicate the substance something is made of, origin, and cause.

**Pöytä on tehty puu/sta.**

The table is made *of wood*.

**Teen puvun villa/sta.**

I will make the dress *out of wool*.

**Häne/stä tulee lääkäri.**

He will be ('*out of him will come*')  
a doctor.

**isä/stä poikaan**

*from father to son*

**kolme/sta neljään kilometriä**

*from three to four kilometres*

**Witold on Puola/sta.**

Witold is *from Poland*.

**Lapsi itkee pelo/sta.**

The child is crying with ('*from*') *fear*.

**Hän hymyili onne/sta.**

He smiled *with happiness*.

**Mi/stä syy/stä Ahti lähti?**

For ('*from*') *what reason* did Ahti  
leave?

Note also the following additional functions of the elative:

**kaksi te/i/stä**

two *of you*

**viisi nais/i/sta**

five *of the women*

<b>Kiitos ruua/</b> <i>sta.</i>	Thank you <i>for the food.</i>
<b>Maksan 100 mk taki/</b> <i>sta.</i>	I will pay 100 marks <i>for the coat.</i>
<b>Minu/</b> <i>sta hän on sairas.</i>	In my opinion (' <i>of me</i> ') he is ill.
<b>aamu/</b> <i>sta iltaan</i>	<i>from morning to evening</i>
<b>Hän on ollut täällä viime</b> <b>vuode/</b> <i>sta.</i>	He has been here <i>since last year.</i>

Concord rules operate in the usual way (§31):

<b>piene/</b> <u><b>stä</b></u> <b>talo/</b> <u><b>sta</b></u>	out of the small house
<b>varhaise/</b> <u><b>sta</b></u> <b>aamu/</b> <u><b>sta</b></u>	from early morning
<b>tä/</b> <u><b>stä</b></u> <b>auto/</b> <u><b>sta</b></u>	out of this car
<b>mu/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>sta</b></u> <b>ma/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>sta</b></u>	from other countries

### §43 ILLATIVE

The illative has three different endings: **-Vn** and **-hVn** (where **V** is always a vowel identical with the immediately preceding vowel), and **-seen**. The illative plural ending is also occasionally **-siin**. Consonant gradation does not occur before the illative ending (§15). The basic meaning is 'into'.

The basic meaning of the illative is '(direction) into', sometimes 'end point of a change or movement'.

The ending **-Vn** occurs after inflectional stems ending in a short vowel (also in the plural; if the plural stem ends in two vowels the illative ending is **-hVn**).

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Illative singular</i>		<i>Illative plural</i>
<b>talo</b>	<b>talo/</b> <u><b>on</b></u>	into the house	<b>talo/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>hin</b></u>
<b>koulu</b>	<b>koulu/</b> <u><b>un</b></u>	to school	<b>koulu/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>hin</b></u>
<b>kaupunki</b>	<b>kaupunki/</b> <u><b>in</b></u>	to the town	<b>kaupunke/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>hin</b></u>
<b>lehti</b>	<b>lehte/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the newspaper	<b>leht/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>kivi</b>	<b>kive/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the stone	<b>kiv/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>käsi</b>	<b>käte/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the hand	<b>käs/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>meri</b>	<b>mere/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the sea	<b>mer/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>kunta</b>	<b>kunta/</b> <u><b>an</b></u>	into the commune	<b>kunt/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>ihminen</b>	<b>ihmise/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the person	<b>ihinis/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>ajatus</b>	<b>ajatukse/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the thought	<b>ajatuks/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>avain</b>	<b>avaime/</b> <u><b>en</b></u>	into the key	<b>avaim/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>in</b></u>
<b>korkea</b>	<b>korkea/</b> <u><b>an</b></u>	into the high	<b>korke/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>hin</b></u> (- <b>siin</b> )
<b>sairaala</b>	<b>sairaala/</b> <u><b>an</b></u>	into (the) hospital	<b>sairaalo/</b> <u><b>i/</b></u> <u><b>hin</b></u>

The ending **-hVn** occurs after monosyllabic inflectional stems (both singular and plural) and also after plural stems ending in two vowels.

<i>Basic</i>	<i>Illative</i>		<i>Illative</i>
<i>plural</i>	<i>singular</i>		<i>plural</i>
<b>maa</b>	<b>maa/han</b>	into the country	<b>ma/i/hin</b>
<b>tie</b>	<b>tie/hen</b>	to the road	<b>te/i/hin</b>
<b>työ</b>	<b>työ/hön</b>	to work	<b>tö/i/hin</b>
<b>suu</b>	<b>suu/hun</b>	into the mouth	<b>su/i/hin</b>
<b>tämä</b>	<b>tä/hän</b>	into this	<b>nä/i/hin</b>
<b>tu</b>	<b>tu/hon</b>	into that	<b>no/i/hin</b>
<b>joka</b>	<b>jo/hon</b>	into which	<b>jo/i/hin</b>
<b>mikä</b>	<b>mi/hin</b>	into which	<b>mi/hin</b>
<b>pullo</b>	<b>pullo/on</b>	into the bottle	<b>pullo/i/hin</b>
<b>kala</b>	<b>kala/an</b>	into the fish	<b>kalo/i/hin</b>
<b>vaikea</b>	<b>vaikea/an</b>	into the difficult	<b>vaike/i/siin (-hin)</b>
<b>purkki</b>	<b>purkki/in</b>	into the tin	<b>purkke/i/hin</b>

The ending **-seen** occurs after polysyllabic inflectional stems ending in a long vowel; the illative plural is then either **-siin** or **-hin**.

<i>Basic</i>	<i>Illative</i>		<i>Illative</i>
<i>form</i>	<i>singular</i>		<i>plural</i>
<b>vapaa</b>	<b>vapaa/seen</b>	into the free	<b>vapa/i/siin (-hin)</b>
<b>harmaa</b>	<b>harmaa/seen</b>	into the grey	<b>harma/i/siin (-hin)</b>
<b>perhe</b>	<b>perhee/seen</b>	into the family	<b>perhe/i/siin (-hin)</b>
<b>tiede</b>	<b>tietee/seen</b>	into science	<b>tiete/i/siin (-hin)</b>
<b>rikas</b>	<b>rikkaa/seen</b>	into the rich	<b>rikka/i/siin (-hin)</b>
<b>taivas</b>	<b>taivaa/seen</b>	to heaven/ into the sky	<b>taiva/i/siin (-hin)</b>

The examples below illustrate the use of the illative in its basic meaning.

**Isä ajaa auton *autotalli/in*.**

Father drives the car *into the garage*.

**Panetko sokeria *kahvi/in*?**

Do you put sugar *into (your) coffee*?

**Hän pani avaimen *lukko/on*.**

He put the key *into the lock*.

**Kyllä minä vastaan *puhelime/en*.**

Yes, I (will) answer *the phone*.

**Lähetän kirjeen *Tukholma/an*.**

I (will) send a letter *to Stockholm*.

**Seija laski paketin maa/han.**

Seija put the parcel *on the ground*.

**Kesällä aion matkustaa Tanska/an.**

In the summer I intend to travel *to Denmark*.

**Kuningatar lähtee Lontoo/seen.**

The queen is going *to London*.

**Lintu rakensi pesänsä puu/hun.**

The bird built its nest *in the tree*.

**Mi/hin ma/i/hin Koivisto lähtee tänä vuonna?**

*Which countries* is Koivisto going *to* this year?

**Aurinko laskee länte/en.**

The sun sets *in the west*.

**Aamulla kaikki menevät työ/hön.**

In the morning everyone goes *to work*.

**Pekka menee koulu/un.**

Pekka goes *to school*.

**Aion mennä sänky/yn.**

I intend to go/am going *to bed*.

**Muutamme uute/en paikka/an.**

We are moving *to a new place*.

**Nixon ei joutunut vankila/an.**

Nixon did not have to go *to prison*.

The illative is also used for the end point of a movement or change, or the surface which a movement is directed towards and comes into direct contact with.

**Käte/en tuli haava.**

The hand was wounded (*'into the hand* came a wound').

**Lamppu ripustetaan katto/on.**

The light is hung from (*'into'*) *the ceiling*.

**Emäntä panee ruuan pöytä/än.**

The hostess puts the food *onto the table*.

**Lapsi panee lakin pää/hän.**

The child puts the cap *on (his) head*.

**Pane kengät jalka/an!**

Put shoes on your feet (*'into the foot'*)!

**Opettaja löi nyrkin pöytään.**

The teacher banged his fist *on the table*.

The illative also occurs in time expressions, indicating the later of two time limits or the time by which an action has not taken place.

<b>viikosta viikko/on</b>	from week <i>to week</i>
<b>aamusta ilta/an</b>	from morning <i>to evening</i>
<b>tammikuusta maaliskuu/hun</b>	from January <i>to March</i>

**En ole käynyt Ruotsissa vuote/en.**

I haven't been to Sweden *for a year*.

**Pekka ei ole ollut kotona kolme/en viikko/on.**

Pekka has not been home *for three weeks*.

**En ole nähnyt häntä pari/in tunti/in.**

I haven't seen him *for a couple of hours*.

Concord rules operate in the normal way.

<b>piene/en kaupunki/in</b>	into a small town
<b>pien/i/in kaupunke/i/hin</b>	into small towns
<b>korkea/an puu/hun</b>	into a high tree
<b>kaikk/i/in kone/i/siin</b>	into all the machines

The final consonant of the illative ending is dropped before possessive suffixes.

<b>talo/on</b>	into the house
<b>talo/o/ni</b>	into my house
<b>talo/o/mme</b>	into our house
<b>talo/i/hin</b>	into your houses
<b>talo/i/hi/nne</b>	into the houses

**§44 ADESSIVE**

The three cases presented above, the inessive, elative and illative, are the internal local cases: **talo/ssa** 'in the house', **talo/sta** 'out of the house', **talo/on** 'into the house'. The corresponding external local cases are the adessive, ablative and allative, cf. **kadu/lla** 'in the street', **kadu/ta** 'from the street', **kadu/lle** 'to the street', and **Peka/lla** "'at" Pekka', **Peka/ta** 'from Pekka', **Peka/lle** 'to Pekka'.

The adessive often means location 'on top of' or 'near', 'owner', or 'instrument' by means of which an action is performed.

<i>Basic</i>	<i>Adessive</i>		<i>Adessive</i>
<i>Form</i>	<i>singular</i>		<i>plural</i>
<b>Pöytä</b>	<b>pöydä/llä</b>	on the table	<b>pöyd/i/llä</b>
<b>Katu</b>	<b>kadu/lla</b>	in the street	<b>kadu/i/lla</b>
<b>auto</b>	<b>auto/lla</b>	by car	<b>auto/i/lla</b>
<b>ihminen</b>	<b>ihmise/llä</b>	'at' the person	<b>ihmis/i/llä</b>
<b>kone</b>	<b>konee/lla</b>	with a machine	<b>kone/i/lla</b>
<b>vastaus</b>	<b>vastaukse/lla</b>	with the answer	<b>vastauks/i/lla</b>

The basic meanings of the adessive are illustrated in the sentences below.

<b>Matto on lattia/lla.</b>	The mat is <i>on the floor</i> .
<b>Kupit ovat pöydä/llä.</b>	The cups are <i>on the table</i> .
<b>Onko juna jo asema/lla?</b>	Is the train already <i>at the station</i> ?
<b>Vaatteeni ovat tuoli/lla.</b>	My clothes are <i>on the chair</i> .
<b>Auto on jo lauta/lla.</b>	The car is already <i>on the ferry</i> .
<b>Kokous on Ylioppilastalo/lla.</b>	The meeting is <i>at the Student House</i> .
<b>Vainikkala on Venäjän raja/lla.</b>	Vainikkala is <i>at the Russian border</i> .
<b>Penkki on peräseinä/llä.</b>	The bench is <i>on the back wall</i> .
<b>Puukko on vyö/llä.</b>	The knife is <i>in the belt</i> .
<b>Poja/lla/ni on kolme lasta.</b>	<i>My son</i> has three children.
<b>Minu/lla ei ole rahaa.</b>	<i>I</i> have no money.
<b>Perti/llä on uusi vene.</b>	<i>Pertti</i> has a new boat.
<b>Isä/llä on harmaat hiukset.</b>	( <i>My father</i> ) has grey hair.
<b>Matkustamme Kuopioon juna/lla.</b>	We travel to Kuopio <i>by train</i> .
<b>Hän kirjoittaa kynä/llä.</b>	He writes <i>with a pen</i> .
<b>Syön keittoa lusika/lla.</b>	I eat soup <i>with a spoon</i> .

The adessive is also used in time expressions, especially those where the headword is not preceded by attributes (time expressions containing attributes are frequently in the essive **-na** ~ **-nä**, §49). If the headword is **hetki** 'moment', **tunti** 'hour', **viikko** 'week', **kausi** 'period', or **vuosisata** 'century', however, the case is invariably the adessive.

<b>Talve/lla voi hiihtää.</b>	<i>In winter</i> one can ski.
<b>Päivä/llä teen työtä.</b>	<i>In the day</i> I work.
<b>Yö/llä pitäisi nukkua.</b>	<i>At night</i> one should sleep.
<b>Tä/llä hetke/llä en voi tulla.</b>	<i>At the moment</i> I can't come.

**Viime tunni/lla puhuimme objektista.**  
*In the last lesson* we spoke about the object.

**Ensi viiko/lla lahden Lappiin.**  
*Next week* I am going to Lapland.

The adessive can also express manner.

<b>Tä/llä tava/lla ei voi tehdä.</b>	One can't do (it) <i>this way</i> .
<b>Puhukaa kova/lla ääne/llä.</b>	Speak <i>in a loud voice</i> .
<b>Tulen miele/llä/ni.</b>	I'll come <i>with pleasure</i> .

Attributes agree in the normal way.

<b>kolme/lla auto/lla</b>	in ('with') three cars
<b>pitkä/llä kadu/lla</b>	<i>in the long street</i>
<b>tä/llä pöydä/llä</b>	<i>on this table</i>
<b>vanha/lla niehe/llä</b>	'at' the old man

## §45 ABLATIVE

The ablative ending is **-lta ~ -ltä**, which is added to the inflectional stem in both singular and plural and causes consonant gradation.

The ablative expresses movement 'off or from a surface' or 'from near' or 'from someone'.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Ablative singular</i>		<i>Ablative plural</i>
<b>maa</b>	<b>maa/ltä</b>	from the country	<b>ma/i/ltä</b>
<b>pöytä</b>	<b>pöydä/ltä</b>	off the table	<b>pöyd/i/ltä</b>
<b>meri</b>	<b>mere/ltä</b>	from the sea	<b>mer/i/ltä</b>
<b>ihminen</b>	<b>ihmise/ltä</b>	from the person	<b>ihmis/i/ltä</b>
<b>mies</b>	<b>miehe/ltä</b>	from the man	<b>mieh/i/ltä</b>

There follow a few examples of the use of the ablative.

<b>Juna lähtee asema/ltä.</b>	The train leaves <i>from the station</i> .
<b>Otatko maton lattia/ltä?</b>	Will you take the mat (up) <i>off the floor</i> ?
<b>Reino nousi penki/ltä.</b>	Reino got up <i>from the bench</i> .
<b>Linja-auto ajoi tie/ltä.</b>	The bus drove <i>off the road</i> .
<b>Tuula tulee kaupungi/ltä.</b>	Tuula comes <i>from the town</i> .

### **Huomenna johtaja palaa kesäloma/ltä/an.**

Tomorrow the director is returning *from his summer holiday*.

### **Raitiovaunu kääntyy Aurakadu/ltä Eerikinkadulle.**

The tram turns *from Aura Street* into Eric's Street.

### **Tänään tuli kirje poja/ltä/ni.**

Today there came a letter *from my son*.

### **Lainaan rahaa äidi/ltä.**

I'll borrow money *from mother*.



**Kysy häne/ltä, missä posti on.**

Ask ('from') *him* where the post office is.

**Ostan auton Niemise/ltä.**

I will buy the car *from Nieminen*.

**Pyydän sinu/lta anteeksi.**

I beg your pardon ('pardon *from you*').

**Anoin rehtori/lta lupaa.**

I applied for permission *from the headmaster*.

**Laulaja/lta meni ääni.**

The singer lost ('*from the singer went*') his voice.

**Poja/lta katkesi jalka.**

The boy broke his leg ('*from the boy broke the leg*').

**Kaikki jää minu/lta kesken.**

I never finish anything ('everything remains unfinished *from me*').

The ablative also expresses *time*, *measure*, and sometimes a *property* of something.

**Viini on vuode/lta 1879.**

The wine is *from the year* 1879.

**Lopetamme tä/ltä päivä/ltä.**

We will finish *for today*.

**Opetus alkaa kello yhdeksä/ltä.**

Teaching begins *at nine o'clock*.

**Lounas on kello kahde/lta/toista.**

Lunch is *at twelve o'clock*.

**Perunat maksavat markan kilo/lta.**

The potatoes cost a mark *a kilo*.

**Maito maksaa kaksi markkaa litra/lta.**

Milk costs two marks *a litre*.

**Kankaan hinta on 25 mk metri/ltä.**

The price of the material is 25 marks *a metre*.

**Hän on luontee/lta/an vilkas.**

He is lively *by nature*.

**Olen paino/lta/ni normaali.**

I am of normal weight ('normal *of my weight*').

Particular attention should be paid to the sense-perception verbs **näyttää** ‘seem, look’, **tuntua** ‘seem, feel’, **maistua** ‘taste’ and **kuulostaa** ‘sound’, which take an ablative adverbial (complement).

<b>Tämä näyttää kumma/ta.</b>	This looks <i>odd</i> .
<b>Puku näyttää hyvä/ltä.</b>	The dress looks <i>good</i> .
<b>Ehdotus tuntuu huono/ta.</b>	The suggestion seems <i>bad</i> .
<b>Laulu tuntui mukava/ta.</b>	The song seemed <i>nice</i> .
<b>Ruoka maistuu huono/ta.</b>	The food tastes <i>bad</i> .
<b>Kuulostaa mainio/ta.</b>	(That) sounds <i>excellent</i> .

Concord rules operate as usual.

<b>mi/ltä laitur<i>u</i>/ta?</b>	from what platform?
<b>likaise/ta lattia/ta</b>	from the dirty floor
<b>tuo/ta vanha/ta naise/ta</b>	from that old lady

## §46 ALLATIVE

The allative ending is **-lle**, which is added to the inflectional stem in the singular and plural and causes consonant gradation.

The allative expresses movement ‘towards a surface’ or ‘to someone’.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Allative singular</i>		<i>Allative plural</i>
<b>katto</b>	<b>kato/ll<i>e</i></b>	onto the roof	<b>kato/i/ll<i>e</i></b>
<b>tuoli</b>	<b>tuoli/ll<i>e</i></b>	onto the chair	<b>tuole/i/ll<i>e</i></b>
<b>nainen</b>	<b>naise/ll<i>e</i></b>	to the woman	<b>nais/i/ll<i>e</i></b>
<b>tyttö</b>	<b>tyttö/ll<i>e</i></b>	to the girl	<b>tyttö/i/ll<i>e</i></b>

The use of the allative is illustrated in the following sentences.

<b>Kirja putosi lattia/ll<i>e</i>.</b>	The book fell <i>onto the floor</i> .
<b>Pane tyynyt sohva/ll<i>e</i>!</b>	Put the cushions <i>on the sofa</i> !
<b>Istuudun tuoli/ll<i>e</i>.</b>	I sit down <i>on the chair</i> .
<b>Lähdemmekö ostoks/i/ll<i>e</i>?</b>	Shall we go shopping (‘ <i>to the purchases</i> ’)?
<b>Kuka vie koiran kävely/ll<i>e</i>?</b>	Who will take the dog <i>for a walk</i> ?
<b>Menen parvekke<i>e</i>/ll<i>e</i>.</b>	I am going <i>onto the balcony</i> .
<b>Älä sylje lattia/ll<i>e</i>!</b>	Don’t spit <i>on the floor</i> !
<b>Tapio lähtee matka/ll<i>e</i> huomenna.</b>	Tapio is going away (‘ <i>to a trip</i> ’) tomorrow.
<b>Illalla menemme Ylioppilastalo/ll<i>e</i>.</b>	In the evening we are going <i>to the Student House</i> .

**Lähdemmekö asema/lle?**Shall we go *to the station*?**Hän on muuttanut Kauppiankadu/lle.**He has moved *to Merchant's Street*.**Oikea/lle vai vasemma/lle?***To the right or to the left?***Puhun sinu/lle.**I talk *to you*.**Kerro asia minu/lle.**Tell me about it ('tell the matter *to me*').**Annan lahjan vaimo/lle/ni.**I give a present *to my wife*.**Näytän te/i/lle tien.**I'll show *you* the way.**Tarjoamme viera/i/lle illallisen.**We offer *the guests* a dinner.**Opetan suomea skandinaave/i/lle.**I teach Finnish *to Scandinavians*.

The perception verbs taking a structure with the ablative (§45) can also take the allative, but in the standard language the ablative is more common.

**Tämä näyttää kumma/lle ~ kumma/lla.** This looks odd.

**Ruoka maistui huono/lle ~ huono/lla.** The food tasted bad.

Finally, a few examples of concord.

<b>tä/lle miehe/lle</b>	to this man
<b>pitkä/lle kävely/lle</b>	for a long walk
<b>likaise/lle lattia/lle</b>	onto the dirty floor
<b>kaik/i/lle nä/i/lle laps/i/lle</b>	to all these children

## §47 DIRECTIONAL VERBS

The set of local cases has a natural threefold division (§40): both internal and external local cases can express static location, movement towards or movement away from. In Finnish, adverbials associated with some verbs expressing change or direction appear in one of the directional cases (elative, illative, ablative, allative), whereas in many Indo-European languages the equivalent expression would contain a 'static' preposition. These verbs include **etsiä** 'look for', **jättää** 'leave', **jäädä** 'stay', **löytää** 'find', **ostaa**

'buy', **pysähtyä** 'stop (intrans.)', **pysäyttää** 'stop (trans.)', **rakentaa** 'build' and **unohtaa** 'forget'.

**Hän etsii avainta tasku/sta.** He looks *in his pocket* for the key.  
**Hän löytää kolikon kadu/ta.** He finds the coin *in the street*.  
**Hän löytää avaimen tasku/sta.** He finds the key *in his pocket*.  
**Elanno/sta löysin uudet kengät.** I found new shoes *at Elanto*.  
**Aion jäädä Ruotsi/in.** I intend to stay *in Sweden*.

**Paavo jäi luoka/lle.**

Paavo failed to pass into the next form ('stayed *in the class*').

**Jätän auton autotalli/in.**

I will leave the car *in the garage*.

**Onko hän unohtanut avaimen lukko/on?**

Has he left ('forgotten') the key *in the lock*?

**Unohdin kirjat huonee/see/ni.**

I left ('forgot') the books *in my room*.

**Ostan olutta Alko/sta.**

I'll buy some beer *in Alko*.

**Ostammeko kartan kirjakaupa/sta?**

Shall we buy a map *at the bookshop*?

**Rakennamme uuden hotellin Turku/un.**

We shall build a new hotel *in Turku*.

**Juna pysähtyi asema/lle.**

The train stopped *at the station*.

**Poliisi pysäytti auton kadunkulma/an.**

The policeman stopped the car *at the corner of the street*.

## §48 PLACE NAMES

Place names decline either in the internal local cases (inessive, elative, illative) or in the external ones (adessive, ablative, allative). The internal cases are more common. The names of countries almost always decline in the internal local cases.

<b>Suome/ssa</b>	in Finland
<b>Suome/sta</b>	from Finland
<b>Suome/en</b>	to Finland
<b>Tanska/ssa</b>	in Denmark
<b>Unkari/in</b>	to Hungary
<b>Sveitsi/stä</b>	from Switzerland

<b>Englanti/in</b>	to England
<b>Neuvostoliitto/ssa</b>	in the Soviet Union
<b>Neuvostoliitto/on</b>	to the Soviet Union
<b>Yhdysvallo/i/sta</b>	from the United States
<b>Yhdysvalto/i/hin</b>	to the United States
<b>NB: Venäjä/llä</b>	in Russia

The names of most towns and other municipalities also decline in the internal local cases, but there are some exceptions.

<b>Helsinki/ssä</b>	in Helsinki
<b>Turu/ssa</b>	in Turku
<b>Oulu/sta</b>	from Oulu
<b>Pori/in</b>	to Pori
<b>Jyväskylä/ssä</b>	in Jyväskylä
<b>Kuopio/sta</b>	from Kuopio
<b>Tukholma/an</b>	to Stockholm
<b>Moskova/ssa</b>	in Moscow
<b>Lontoo/seen</b>	to London
<b>Pariisi/ssa</b>	in Paris
<b>Tamperee/lla</b>	in Tampere
<b>Tamperee/ltä</b>	from Tampere
<b>Tamperee/lle</b>	to Tampere
<b>Rauma/lla</b>	in Rauma
<b>Riihimäe/ltä</b>	from Riihimäki
<b>Rovanieme/llä</b>	in Rovaniemi
<b>Seinäjoe/lla</b>	in Seinäjoki

## 11 OTHER CASES

- *Essive*
- *Translative*
- *Abessive, comitative and instructive*

### §49 ESSIVE

The essive ending is **-na ~ -nä**, which is added to the inflectional stem in the singular and plural. The structure of the essive ending is such that it does not cause consonant gradation (§15.2). The essive usually expresses a (temporary) state or function, sometimes circumstances, conditions or causes. The essive is also used in time expressions.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Essive singular</i>		<i>Essive plural</i>
<b>auto</b>	<b>auto/<u>na</u></b>	as a car	<b>auto/<u>i/na</u></b>
<b>ihminen</b>	<b>ihmise/<u>nä</u></b>	as a person	<b>ihmis/<u>i/nä</u></b>
<b>nuori</b>	<b>nuore/<u>na</u></b>	(as a) young (person)	<b>nuor/<u>i/na</u></b>
<b>vanha</b>	<b>vanha/<u>na</u></b>	(as an) old (person)	<b>vanho/<u>i/na</u></b>

**Heikki on Jämsässä lääkäri/nä.**

Heikki is (working *as*) a doctor in Jämsä.

**Olemme siellä vuokralais/i/na.**

We are lodgers there.

**Lähetän ilmoituksen pikakirjee/nä.**

I will send the notice *as an express letter*.

**Kuka siellä on apu/na?**

Who is helping ('*as a help*') there?

**Pidämme ehdotusta järkevä/nä.**

We regard the proposal *as sensible*.

**Olen Suomessa turisti/na.**

I am a tourist in Finland.

**Pentti oli kolme viikkoa sairaa/na.**

Pentti was ill for three weeks.

**Viini kelpaa kylmä/nä/kin.**

Wine is good even *when cold*.

**Minulla on *tapa/na* polttaa vain illalla.**

I have *a habit* of smoking only in the evening.

**Pekka lähti *iloise/na* luennolle.**

Pekka went cheerfully (*'as cheerful'*) to the lecture.

**Syön puuron *kuuma/na*.**

I will eat the porridge *hot*.

**Pysykö ilma *kirkkaa/na*?**

Will the air stay *clear*?

**Arto tuli *väsynee/nä* kotiin.**

Arto came home *tired*.

The *essive* is used in time expressions when the reference is to festivals and days of the week, and usually when the headword denoting time is preceded by an attribute (cf. §44).

***Joulu/na* olin kotona.**

*At Christmas* I was at home.

***Itsenäisyyspäivä/nä* presidentillä on vastaanotto.**

*On Independence Day* the president has a reception.

***Juhannukse/na* aion purjehtia.**

*At midsummer* I'm going sailing.

**Tuletko meille *lauantai/na*?**

Will you come round (*'to us'*) *on Saturday*?

***Perjantai/na* kaikki menevät saunaan.**

*On Friday* everyone goes to sauna.

**Minulla on luento *maanantai/na*.**

I have a lecture *on Monday*.

***Sunnuntai/na* täytyy levätä.**

*On Sunday* one must rest.

***Viime talve/na* olin sairaana.**

*Last winter* I was ill.

***Ensi kesä/nä* lähden Italia/an.**

*Next summer* I'm going to Italy.

***Erää/nä päivä/nä* tapasin hänet.**

*One day* I met him/her.

***Kahte/na yö/nä* on ollut hallaa.**

*On two nights* there has been frost.

***Mi/nä päivä/nä* hän tulee?**

*What day* is he coming?

***Kuum/i/na kes/i/nä* on paljon kärpäsiä.**

*In hot summers* there are lots of flies.

***Tä/nä vuon/na* inflaatio on taas noussut.**

*This year* inflation has risen again.

**Tammikuun *seitsemänte/nä päivä/nä*.**

*On the seventh (day) of* January.

Note that the words **ensi** ‘next’ and **viime** ‘last’ do not obey the concord rules for attributes, cf. **ensi talve/na** ‘next winter’, **viime talve/na** ‘last winter’.

## §50 TRANSLATIVE

The translative ending is **-ksi**, which is added to the inflectional stem in the singular and plural and causes consonant gradation (the ending begins with two consonants). The translative generally expresses a state, property, function or position into which something or someone enters, or the end point of a movement or change.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Translative singular</i>		<i>Translative plural</i>
<b>auto</b>	<b>auto/ksi</b>	to (become) a car	<b>auto/i/ksi</b>
<b>pieni</b>	<b>piene/ksi</b>	to (become) little	<b>pien/i/ksi</b>
<b>lahja</b>	<b>lahja/ksi</b>	to (become) a present, as a present	<b>lahjo/i/ksi</b>
<b>rengas</b>	<b>renkaa/ksi</b>	to (become) a ring	<b>renka/i/ksi</b>

**Lauri tuli iloise/ksi.**

Lauri became *pleased*.

**Isä on tullut vanha/ksi.**

Father has become *old*.

**Tuletko kipeä/ksi?**

Are you becoming *ill*?

**Tyttö aikoo insinööri/ksi.**

The girl intends to become *an engineer*.

**Pekka antoi kirjan lahja/ksi.**

Pekka gave the book *as a present*.

**Juotko lasin tyhjä/ksi?**

Will you empty your glass (‘drink your glass *empty*’)?

**Poikasi on kasvanut pitkä/ksi.**

Your son has grown *tall*.

**Jalat käyvät kanke/i/ksi.**

(One’s) legs go *stiff*.

**Kirjoitan kirjan valmii/ksi.**

I shall finish writing the book (‘write the book *finished*’).

**Olot muuttuivat normaale/i/ksi.**

The conditions became *normal*.

**Pääsetkö opettaja/ksi Helsinkiin?**

Will you be able *to become a teacher* in Helsinki?

**Tämä riittää perustelu/ksi.**

This suffices *as an explanation*.

**Auli luuli minua norjalaise/ksi.**

Auli thought me *a Norwegian*.



**Turkua sanotaan vanha/ksi kaupungi/ksi.**

Turku is said to be *an old city*.

**Vennamo ei saa kutsua idiooti/ksi.**

Vennamo must not be called *an idiot*.

**Opettaja puhuu suome/ksi.**

The teacher speaks *in Finnish*.

**Kaikki esitelmät ovat ruotsi/ksi.**

All the lectures are *in Swedish*.

**Mitä 'auto' on englanni/ksi?**

What is 'auto' *in English*?

**Tule vähän lähemmä/ksi!**

Come a bit *closer*!

**Siirrykää hiukan kauemmas/ksi!**

Move a little *further away*!

**Nouse ylemmälle/ksi!**

Get up *higher*!

The translative also expresses time, in particular time by which something happens or during which something happens, or the point of time until which something is postponed.

**Tulen kotiin joulu/ksi.**

I'll come home *for Christmas*.

**Onko meillä ohjelmaa iltapäivä/ksi?**

Do we have a programme *for the afternoon*?

**Minun täytyy ehtiä kotiin kello kolme/ksi.**

I must get home *by three*.

**Pekka lähtee Espanjaan viiko/ksi.**

Pekka is going to Spain *for a week*.

**Poistun kahde/ksi tunni/ksi.**

I shall be away *for two hours*.

**Ostatko ruokaa sunnuntai/ksi?**

Will you buy some food *for Sunday*?

**Lykkäämme kokouksen huomise/ksi.**

We shall postpone the meeting *until tomorrow*.

**Maksu siirryt myöhemmälle/ksi.**

The payment is transferred to a later date (*'to later'*).

Note the contrast between the essive and the translative in pairs such as the following.

**Tulen kotiin joulu/ksi.**

I'll come home *for Christmas*.

**Joulu/na olen kotona.**

*At Christmas* I am/shall be at home.

**Ostatko ruokaa sunnuntai/ksi?**

Will you buy some food *for Sunday*?

**Sunnuntai/na emme mene  
kirkkoon.**

*On Sunday* we do not go to church.

<b>Kesä/ksi lähdén Suomeen.</b>	I am going to Finland <i>for the summer</i> .
<b>Kesä/llä olen Suomessa.</b>	<i>In the summer</i> I shall be in Finland.

When the translative ending is followed by a possessive suffix the final **-i** changes to **-e-**.

<b>Tuletko vaimo/kse/ni?</b>	Will you become <i>my wife</i> ?
<b>Laulan oma/ksi ilo/kse/ni.</b>	I sing <i>for my own pleasure</i> .

**Juomme maljan sinun kunnia/kse/si.**  
We drink a toast in ('to') *your honour*.

**He ottavat lapsen oma/kse/en.**  
They adopt ('take') the child *as their own*.

## §51 ABESSIVE, COMITATIVE AND INSTRUCTIVE

These three cases are all rare; the instructive and the comitative appear mainly in fixed expressions like idioms.

The abessive ending is **-tta ~ -ttä**, which is added to the inflectional stem in the singular and plural and causes consonant gradation. Its meaning is 'without'.

**Hän lähti ulkomaille raha/tta ja passi/tta.**  
He went abroad *without money* and *without a passport*.

**Hänet tuomittiin syy/ttä.**  
He was condemned *without cause*.

**Joka kuri/tta kasvaa, se kunnia/tta kuolee.**  
He who grows up *without discipline* will die *without honour*.

The preposition **ilman** 'without' is usually used instead of the abessive; it takes the partitive, e.g. **ilman raha/a** 'without money', **ilman passi/a** 'without a passport'.

The instructive ending is **-n**. It occurs almost exclusively in a few fixed plural expressions.

<b>om/i/n silm/i/n</b>	with (one's) own eyes
<b>kaik/i/n puol/i/n</b>	in all respects
<b>palja/i/n pä/i/n</b>	with bare head
<b>nä/i/llä ma/i/n</b>	in these parts (areas)
<b>kaks/i/n käs/i/n</b>	with both hands

The comitative ending is **-ine-**, and this is always followed by a possessive suffix. Because the **-i-** of the ending is in fact a fossilized plural **-i-**(cf. §26), there is no difference between the comitative singular and plural. The meaning of the case is 'with, accompanied by'.

**Läsnä oli Viljo Kohonen vaimo/ine/en.**

Present was Viljo Kohonen *with his wife*.

**Läsnä olivat Viljo Kohonen ja Esko Kallio vaimo/ine/en.**

Present were Viljo Kohonen and Esko Kallio, *accompanied by their wives*.

**Rauma on mukava kaupunki vanho/ine talo/ine/en ja kape/ine katu/ine/en.**

Rauma is a pleasant town *with its old houses and narrow streets*.

## 12 NUMERALS

- *Cardinal numbers*
- *Ordinal numbers*

### §52 CARDINAL NUMBERS

#### §52.1 INFLECTION OF CARDINAL NUMBERS

All cardinal numbers decline like nouns, adjectives and pronouns: they inflect for number and case. Several sound alternations occur in the inflected forms.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Inflectional stem (no consonant gradation)</i>	<i>Inflectional stem (with consonant gradation)</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
1 yksi	yhte/en	yhde/n	yh/tä
2 kaksi	kahte/en	kahde/n	kah/ta
3 kolme	kolme/en		kolme/a
4 neljä	neljä/än		neljä/ä
5 viisi	viite/en	viide/n	viit/tä
6 kuusi	kuute/en	kuude/n	kuut/ta
7 seitsemän	seitsemä/än		seitsemä/ä
8 kahdeksan	kahdeksa/an		kahdeksa/a
9 yhdeksän	yhdeksä/än		yhdeksä/ä
10 kymmenen	kymmene/en		kymmen/tä

The cardinal numbers 11–19 are formed from the numbers 1–9 by the addition of the invariable form **toista** (cf. **toinen** ‘(an)other, second’).

- 11 yksitoista
- 12 kaksitoista
- 13 kolmetoista
- 14 neljätoista
- 15 viisitoista
- 16 kuusitoista
- 17 seitsemäntoista
- 18 kahdeksantoista
- 19 yhdeksäntoista

Endings are added to the inflectional stem of the first part of the number.

<b>yhde/ssä/toista</b>	in 11
<b>kolme/n/toista</b>	of 13
<b>viide/stä/toista</b>	out of 15
<b>seitsemä/ä/toista</b>	17 ( <i>partitive</i> )
<b>yhdeksä/lle/toista</b>	to 19

The tens from 20 upward are formed from the cardinal numbers two to nine followed by **kymmentä** (cf. **kymmenen** ‘ten’).

20	kaksikymmentä
30	kolmekymmentä
40	neljäkymmentä
50	viisikymmentä
60	kuusikymmentä
70	seitsemänkymmentä
80	kahdeksänkymmentä
90	yhdeksänkymmentä
100	sata

27	kaksikymmentäseitsemän
39	kolmekymmentäyhdeksän
52	viisikymmentäkaksi
76	seitsemänkymmentäkuusi
99	yhdeksänkymmentäyhdeksän

Note that **kymmentä** (**kymmenen**) declines together with the other parts of the numeral.

<b>kahde/n/kymmene/n</b>	of 20
<b>kolme/lle/kymmene/lle</b>	to 30
<b>viide/stä/kymmene/stä</b>	out of 50
<b>kuute/na/kymmene/nä</b>	as 60
<b>yhdeksä/llä/kymmene/llä</b>	with 90
<b>kahde/lla/kymmene/llä/kolme/lla</b>	from 23
<b>seitsemä/stä/kymmene/stä/kahdeksa/sta</b>	out of 78

The cardinal numbers continue in the same way. The hundreds and thousands are formed from the numbers two to nine followed by **sataa** ‘100’, **tuhatta** ‘1,000’, **miljoonaa** ‘1,000,000’, which all inflect for number and case like the other parts of the numeral.

200	kaksisataa
300	kolmesataa
700	seitsemäsataa
1,000	tuhat (tuhante/en, tuhanne/n, tuhat/ta)
3,000	kolmetuhatta

9,000	yhdeksäntuhatta
238	kaksisataakolmekymmentäkahdeksan
711	seitsemäsataayksitoista
902	yhdeksäsataakaksi
2,134	kaksituhatta satakolmekymmentäneljä
9,876	yhdeksäntuhatta kahdeksansataaseitsemänkymmentäkuusi
87,100	kahdeksankymmentäseitsemäntuhatta sata
456,302	neljäsataaviisikymmentäkuusituhatta kolmesataakaksi
1,000,000	miljoona
4,000,000	neljä miljoonaa

Case endings are added to all the parts of a cardinal number, but in long numerals the ending is often added to the last element only.

<b>kahde/n/sada/n</b>	of 200
<b>kolme/lle/sada/lle</b>	to 300
<b>viide/stä/tuhanne/sta</b>	out of 5,000
<b>kolme/lla/tuhanne/lla sada/lla/kahde/lla</b>	with 3,102
<b>kolmetuhatta satakahde/lla</b>	with 3,102

## §52.2 USE OF CARDINAL NUMBERS

When a cardinal number is the subject, object or complement, i.e. when it occurs in the nominative or partitive, the rest of the phrase it modifies takes the partitive singular, e.g. **kolme talo/a** ‘three houses’.

When a cardinal number is the subject, object or complement the words it modifies take the partitive singular.

A second important rule for the use of cardinals is the following:

When the numeral expression is the subject, the predicate verb is in the singular.

### **Kadulla seisoo kolme mies/tä.**

There are *three men* standing in the street.

### **Minulla on kaksi velje/ä.**

I have *two brothers*.

### **Neljä ministeri/ä erosi hallituksesta.**

*Four ministers* resigned from the cabinet.

**Kuusitoista ihmis/tä sai surmansa lento-onnettomuudessa.**

*Sixteen people died in the plane crash.*

**Ostan kolme pullo/a punaviiniä.**

*I will buy three bottles of red wine.*

**Eilen kirjoitin seitsemän sivu/a.**

*Yesterday I wrote seven pages.*

**En omista kah/ta auto/a.**

*I don't own two cars.*

**Opiskelen kolme/a kiel/tä.**

*I am studying three languages.*

**Viit/tä/kymmen/tä osanottaja/a emme voi hyväksyä.**

*Fifty participants we cannot accept.*

**Hän ei maksa kolme/a/tuhatta markka/a koneesta.**

*He/she will not pay three thousand marks for the machine.*

**Hinta on yhdeksän markka/a kilolta.**

*The price is nine marks per kilo.*

When a cardinal number is an attribute or an adverbial, i.e. appears in cases other than nominative or partitive, its case is determined by that of the headword (the noun), and all the parts of a compound numeral are similarly inflected. With the exception of invariable plurals these expressions are always singular.

Cardinal numbers agree with the headword in the genitive, all six local cases, the essive and the translative.

**Matkallani käyn kolme/ssa maa/ssa.**

*On my trip I shall visit three countries ('in three countries').*

**Neljä/n litra/n hinta on seitsemän markkaa.**

*The price of four litres is seven marks.*

**En ole käynyt Suomessa viite/en/toista vuote/en.**

*I have not been to Finland for 15 years.*

**Hän on kahde/n piene/n lapse/n äiti.**

*She is the mother of two small children.*

**Verotoimistot palauttavat rahaa seitsemä/lle/sada/lle/tuhonne/lle suomalaiselle.**

*The tax offices (will) refund money to 700,000 Finns.*

**tuhanne/n ja yhde/n yö/n tarinat**

a thousand and one nights ('the stories of...')

**Yhte/nä päivä/nä viikossa olen Helsingissä.**

I am in Helsinki *one day* a week.

**Olen kolme/n/kymmene/n/kahde/n vuode/n ikäinen.**

I am 32 *years* old.

**Kuude/ssa/toista tapaukse/ssa sairas kuoli.**

In 16 *cases* the patient died.

**Kirje tuli kande/lta ystävä/ltä/ni.**

The letter came *from two of my friends*.

**Kahde/lla/tuhonne/lla marka/lla pääsee jopa Afrikkaan.**

For 2,000 *marks* one can even get to Africa.

**Minulla on kahde/t sakse/t.**

I have *two pairs of scissors*.

**Tänä lauantaina on vain yhde/t häät.**

This Saturday there is only *one wedding*.

**Tämä kangas pitää leikata kaks/i/lla saks/i/lla.**

This cloth has to be cut *with two pairs of scissors*.

When the numeral expression is the subject, the verb, as was said above, is generally in the singular, e.g. **kolme tyttöä juokse/e** 'three girls run'. But when the numeral expression is preceded e.g. by the words **nämä** 'these' or **nuo** 'those' (which make the phrase definite), the verb is then in the plural.

**Nämä kolme miestä seiso/vat kadulla.**

These three men *are standing* in the street.

**Nuo kaksi o/vat naimisissa.**

Those two *are* married.

**Nämä neljä ehdotusta o/vat yhtä hyviä.**

These four proposals *are* equally good.

In other contexts too the verb may be in the plural when the subject is a definite numeral expression.

**Kuusi paikallissijaa tuli/vat esille luvussa 10.**

The six local cases *were discussed* in Chapter 10.

**Kolmetoista maata pääsi/vät eilen sopimukseen.**

The 13 countries *reached* an agreement yesterday.



## §53 ORDINAL NUMBERS

The nominative of ordinal numbers is formed by adding the ending **-s** to the inflectional stem of the corresponding cardinal number (exceptions are **ensimmäinen** ‘first’ and **toinen** ‘second’). In the ordinal inflectional stem **-s** is replaced by **-nte-**, which alternates with **-nne-** in accordance with the consonant gradation rules. The partitive singular has the ending **-ta ~ -tä**, and **-s** then changes to **-t-**. 1=1st, 2=2nd, 3=3rd, etc.

	<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Inflectional stem (no consonant gradation)</i>	<i>Inflectional stem (with consonant gradation)</i>	<i>Partitive singular</i>
1	ensimmäinen	ensimmäise/en		ensimmäis/tä
2	toinen	toise/en		tois/ta
3	kolma/s	kolma/ <b>nte</b> /en	kolma/ <b>nne</b> /n	kolma/ <b>t</b> /tä
4	neljäs	neljänteen	neljännen	neljättä
5	viides	viidenteen	viidennen	viidettä
6	kuudes	kuudenteen	kuudennen	kuudetta
7	seitsemäs	seitsemänteen	seitsemännen	seitsemättä
8	kahdeksas	kahdeksänteen	kahdeksannen	kahdeksatta
9	yhdeksäs	yhdeksänteen	yhdeksännen	yhdeksättä
10	kymmenes	kymmenenteen	kymmenennen	kymmenettä
11	yhdestoista	yhdenteentoista	yhdennentoista	yhdeettätoista
12	kahdestoista	kahdenteentoista	kahdennentoista	kahdeettätoista
13	kolmastoista	kolmanteentoista	kolmannentoista	kolmdeettätoista
16	kuudestoista	kuudenteentoista	kuudennentoista	kuudeettätoista
20	kahdes-	kahdenteen-	kahdennen-	kahdetta-
	kymmenes	kymmenenteen	kymmenennen	kymmenettä
50	viides-	viidenteen-	viidennen-	viidettä-
	kymmenes	kymmenenteen	kymmenennen	kymmenettä
100	sadas	sadanteen	sadannen	sadatta
300	kolmas-	kolmanteen-	kolmannen-	kolmatta-
	sadas	sadanteen	sadannen	sadatta
1,000	tuhannes	tuhannenteen	tuhannennen	tuhannetta
9,000	yhdeksäs-	yhdeksänteen-	yhdeksännen-	yhdeksättä-
	tuhannes	tuhannenteen	tuhannennen	tuhannetta

In long compound ordinal numbers often only the last element is given an ending.

- 3,134th **kolmetuhatta satakolmekymmentäneljä/s**  
 (cf. **kolma/s/tuhanne/s sada/s/kolma/s/kymmene/s/neljä/s**)  
**kolmetuhatta satakolmekymmentäneljä/nne/n**  
 (cf. **kolma/nne/n/tuhanne/nne/n sada/nne/n/kolma/nne/n/**  
**kymmene/nne/n/neljä/nne/n**)

Ordinal numbers function like adjectives and agree with the headword in case and number.

**Miettusen kolma/nne/ssa hallituksessa**  
*in* Miettunen's *third* cabinet

**Vasta toinen yritys onnistui.**  
 Only the *second* attempt succeeded.

**tammikuun neljä/nte/nä päivänä**  
*(on)* the *fourth* (day) of January

**helmikuun seitsemä/nte/nä/toista päivänä**  
*(on)* the *17th* of February

**Olen syntynyt joulukuun kahde/nte/na/kymmene/nte/nä/kuude/nte/na päivänä.**  
 I was born *on the 26th* of December.

**Poikani on ensimmäise/llä luokalla.**  
 My son is *in the first* class.

**Hissi menee viide/nte/en kerrokseen.**  
 The lift goes *to the fifth* floor.

**Joka seitsemä/nne/llä suomalaisella on liian pitkä työmatka.**  
 Every *seventh* Finn has too long a journey to work.

## 13 PRONOUNS

- *Personal pronouns*
- *Demonstrative pronouns*
- *Interrogative pronouns*
- *Indefinite pronouns*
- *Relative pronouns*

Finnish pronouns inflect for number and case. Some pronouns function like nouns, as independent words (a), while others are like adjectives and agree with their headword in the normal way (b).

- (a) **Tämä on kirja.** *This is a book.*  
**Tuo ei ole totta.** *That is not true.*  
**Hän on näyttelijä.** *He is an actor.*
- (b) **Asun tä/ssä talo/ssa.** *I live in this house.*  
**Mi/ssä talo/ssa asut?** *In which house do you live?*  
**Mi/nä päivä/nä lähdette?** *What day are you leaving?*

There often occur exceptional forms in the declension of pronouns: these are indicated below. Note in particular the pronouns **joka** ‘who, which’, **mikä** ‘which, what’ and **tämä** ‘this’, where the last syllable **-ka**, **-kä**, **-mä** occurs only in the nominative singular and plural and the genitive singular. In all other forms this syllable is dropped: cf. **tämä** ‘this’: **tämä/n** ‘of this’: **tä/ssä** ‘in this’: **tä/llä** ‘with this’, etc.

In the following sections the pronouns are presented in five groups. For each pronoun the most important case forms are given in the singular and plural (if they occur), together with examples of how they are used.

### §54 PERSONAL PRONOUNS

	<i>Singular</i>			<i>Plural</i>		
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>minä</b>	I <b>sinä</b> you	<b>hän</b> he, she	<b>me</b> we	<b>te</b> you	<b>he</b> they
<i>Gen.</i>	minu/n	sinu/n	häne/n	me/i/dän	te/i/dän	he/i/dän
<i>Acc.</i>	minu/t	sinu/t	häne/t	me/i/dät	te/i/dät	he/i/dät
<i>Part.</i>	minu/a	sinu/a	hän/tä	me/i/tä	te/i/tä	he/i/tä
<i>Iness.</i>	minu/ssa	sinu/ssa	häne/ssä	me/i/ssä	te/i/ssä	he/i/ssä
<i>Elat.</i>	minu/sta	sinu/sta	häne/stä	me/i/stä	te/i/stä	he/i/stä
<i>Illat.</i>	minu/un	sinu/un	häne/en	me/i/hin	te/i/hin	he/i/hin
<i>Adess.</i>	minu/lla	sinu/lla	häne/llä	me/i/llä	te/i/llä	he/i/llä

	<i>Singular</i>			<i>Plural</i>		
<i>Ablat.</i>	minu/lta	sinu/lta	häne/ltä	me/i/ltä	te/i/ltä	he/i/ltä
<i>Allat.</i>	minu/lle	sinu/lle	häne/lle	me/i/lle	te/i/lle	he/i/lle

<b><i>Sinu/ssa ei ole mitään vikaa.</i></b>	There is nothing wrong <i>with you</i> .
<b><i>Minä rakastan te/i/tä.</i></b>	I love <i>you</i> (pl. or polite sing.).
<b><i>Anna kirje häne/lle!</i></b>	Give the letter <i>to him/her!</i>
<b><i>Minu/lla on kova nälkä.</i></b>	<i>I am very hungry.</i>
<b><i>He/i/hin ei voi luottaa.</i></b>	One cannot trust <i>them</i> .
<b><i>Minu/sta ehdotus on hyvä.</i></b>	<i>In my opinion</i> the proposal is good.
<b><i>Näin häne/t ravintolassa.</i></b>	I saw <i>him/her</i> in the restaurant.
<b><i>Tämä on he/i/dän kirjansa.</i></b>	This is <i>their</i> book.
<b><i>Saatte vastauksen me/i/ltä huomenna.</i></b>	You will receive an answer <i>from us</i> tomorrow.
<b><i>Saatomme te/i/dät kotiin.</i></b>	We will see <i>you</i> home.
<b><i>Ettekö enää tunne minu/a?</i></b>	Don't you know <i>me</i> any longer?

For concord between personal pronouns and verbs see §24, and for the possessive forms and the possessive suffixes see §36.

The Finnish reflexive pronoun is **itse** 'self', which inflects for case and is followed by the appropriate possessive suffix. It has no separate plural forms.

<b><i>Haen sen itse.</i></b>	I will fetch it <i>myself</i> .
<b><i>Ajan itse partani.</i></b>	I shave ('my beard') <i>myself</i> .
<b><i>Annan kirjeen hänelle itse/lle/en.</i></b>	I will give the letter to him <i>himself</i> .
<b><i>Saitko kirjeen häneltä itse/ltä/än?</i></b>	Did you get a letter from him <i>himself?</i>
<b><i>Pidätkö itse/ä/si viisaana?</i></b>	Do you regard <i>yourself</i> as wise?
<b><i>Pohdin asiaa itse/kse/ni.</i></b>	I will consider the matter <i>by myself</i> .
<b><i>Itse/e/nsä ei voi luottaa.</i></b>	One cannot trust <i>oneself</i> .
<b><i>Ole oma itse/si!</i></b>	Be <i>yourself</i> ('your own self')!

The combination **toinen—toinen** 'one—the other/another' is used to express the reciprocal sense 'each other, one another'. The first word of the pair is indeclinable but the second occurs in the singular followed by the necessary case ending and possessive suffix. Another way of expressing reciprocity is to use only the one word **toinen**, in the plural and inflected for the appropriate case ending and possessive suffix.

**Lähetämme kirjeitä toinen toise/lle/mme (~ tois/i/lle/mme).**

We send letters *to each other*.

**Rakastatteko toinen tois/ta/nne (~ tois/i/a/nne)?**

Do you love *each other?*

**Ajamme toinen toise/mme (~ tois/te/mme) autoilla.**

We drive in *each other's* cars.

## §55 DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

The main demonstrative pronouns are **tämä** ‘this’ and **tuo** ‘that’. The pronoun **se** ‘it’ refers primarily to something previously mentioned. The plural forms of all these pronouns are irregular (the initial consonant changes, etc.). In the declension of **tämä** the syllable **-mä** occurs only in the nominative singular and plural and the genitive singular.

	<i>Singular</i>			<i>Plural</i>		
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>tämä</b> this	<b>tuo</b> that	<b>se</b> it	<b>nämä</b> these	<b>nuo</b> those	<b>ne</b> they
<i>Gen.</i>	tämä/n	tuon	se/n	nä/i/den	no/i/den	ni/i/den
<i>Part.</i>	tä/tä	tuota	si/tä	nä/i/tä	no/i/ta	ni/i/tä
<i>Iness.</i>	tä/ssä	tuossa	sii/nä	nä/i/ssä	no/i/ssa	ni/i/ssä
<i>Elat.</i>	tä/stä	tuosta	sii/tä	nä/i/stä	no/i/sta	ni/i/stä
<i>Illat.</i>	tä/hän	tuohon	sii/hen	nä/i/hin	no/i/hin	ni/i/hin
<i>Adess.</i>	tä/llä	tuolla	si/llä	nä/i/llä	no/i/lla	ni/i/llä
<i>Ablat.</i>	tä/ltä	tuolta	si/ltä	nä/i/ltä	no/i/lta	ni/i/ltä
<i>Allat.</i>	tä/lle	tuolle	si/lle	nä/i/lle	no/i/lle	ni/i/lle
<i>Ess.</i>	tä/nä	tuona	si/nä	nä/i/nä	no/i/na	ni/i/nä
<i>Transl.</i>	tä/ksi	tuoksi	si/ksi	nä/i/ksi	no/i/ksi	ni/i/ksi

**Tämä kirja on minun.**

*This book is mine.*

**Tämä on kirja.**

*This is a book.*

**Tuo nainen on Tyyne Nyrkiö.**

*That woman is Tyyne Nyrkiö.*

**Onko tuo sinun autosi?**

*Is that your car?*

**Se on minun autoni.**

*It is my car.*

**Se auto on Tyyne's.**

*That car is Tyyne's.*

**Tä/ssä on leipää ja juustoa.**

*Here is (some) bread and (some) cheese.*

**Tä/ssä ravintolassa on hyvä ruoka.**

*This ('in this') restaurant has good food.*

**Hän meni tuo/hon taloon.**

*He/she went into that house.*

**Miksi puhut tuo/lla tavalla?**

*Why do you speak in that way?*

**Si/llä tavalla ei saa puhua!**

*One must not speak like that ('in that way').*

**Si/nä päivänä aurinko paistoi.**

*On that day the sun shone.*

**Si/nä huoneessa ei voi olla.**

*One can't stay in (i.e. 'use') that room.*

**Tauno meni *sii/hen* huoneeseen missä Ristokin oli.**

Tauno went *into the* room where Risto was too.

***Sii/tä* asia/sta en tiedä mitään.**

*About that* matter I know nothing.

**Tunnetko *no/i/ta* miehiä?**

Do you know *those* men?

**En tunne *he/i/tä*.**

I don't know *them*.

***He/i/llä* on uusi talo.**

*They* have a new house.

**En kerro *he/i/lle* tästä.**

I won't tell *them* about this.

***Nämä* kukat maksavat viisi markkaa.**

*These* flowers cost five marks.

**Mitä *nuo* maksavat?**

What do *those* cost?

***Ne/kin* maksavat viisi markkaa.**

*They also* cost five marks.

***Nä/i/den* kukkien hinta on kolme markkaa.**

The price *of these* flowers is three marks.

**Entä *no/i/den*?**

And *of those*?

***Ni/i/nä* aikoina asuin kotona.**

At that time (*'those times'*) I was living at home.

**Tällainen** 'of this kind', **tuollainen** 'of that kind', **sellainen** 'such' and **semmoinen** 'such' all decline like **ihminen** nominals (§20.1).

***Tällaise/lla* autolla ei voi ajaa.**

One cannot drive in a car *like this*.

**Paljonko *tuollainen* auto maksaa?**

How much does *that kind* of car cost?

**Oletko syönyt *tälläis/ta* ruokaa ennen?**

Have you eaten *this kind* of food before?

**En ole syönyt *sellais/ta* ruokaa.**

I have not eaten *such* food.

**Sellais/i/a ihmisiä ei ole paljon.**

There are not many *such* people.

**Tällaise/ssa tilanteessa täytyy olla hiljaa.**

*In this kind of* situation one must keep silent.

**En lue tuollais/i/a kirjoja.**

I don't read books *of that kind*.

## §56 INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

Interrogative pronouns were briefly introduced in §30.2 above. Many of the question words are actually inflected forms of the interrogative pronouns **kuka** 'who' and **mikä** 'which, what'. The singular forms of **kuka** are based on the stem **kene-** (NB: partitive singular **ke/tä**), and the plural forms on the stem **ke-**. Note in particular the accusative singular **kene/t** and the nominative plural **ke/t/kä**. In the declension of **mikä** the syllable **-kä** is dropped in all cases except the nominative singular and plural and the genitive singular (**mikä**, **mi/n/kä**, **mi/t/kä**). Almost all the plural forms of **mikä** are the same as the singular.

	<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>kuka</b> who	<b>mikä</b> which, what	ke/t/kä	mi/t/kä
<i>Gen.</i>	kene/n	mi/n/kä	ke/i/den	mi/n/kä
<i>Acc.</i>	kene/t	mi/n/kä	ke/t/kä	mi/t/kä
<i>Part.</i>	ke/tä	mi/tä	ke/i/tä	(other forms
<i>Iness.</i>	kene/ssä	mi/ssä	ke/i/ssä	as singular)
<i>Elat.</i>	kene/stä	mi/stä	ke/i/stä	
<i>Illat.</i>	kene/en	mi/hin	ke/i/hin	
<i>Adess.</i>	kene/llä	mi/llä	ke/i/llä	
<i>Ablat.</i>	kene/ltä	mi/ltä	ke/i/ltä	
<i>Allat.</i>	kene/lle	mi/lle	ke/i/lle	
<i>Ess.</i>	kene/nä	mi/nä	ke/i/nä	
<i>Transl.</i>	kene/ksi	mi/ksi	ke/i/ksi	

**Kuka tuo mies on?**

*Who is that man?*

**Kene/n kynä tämä on?**

*Whose pen is this?*

**Mi/ssä talossa asut?**

*In which house do you live?*

**Mi/tä kieltä opiskelemme?**

*What language are we studying?*

**Mi/hin ravintolaan mennään?**

*Which restaurant shall we go to?*

**Kene/ssä vika on?**

*Whose fault is it ('in whom is the fault')?*

**Mi/n/kä omenan valitset?**

*Which apple do you choose?*

**Ke/t/kä nuo ihmiset ovat?**

*Who are those people?*

**Kene/ltä voimme kysyä?**

*Whom ('from whom') could we ask?*

**Mi/hin kaupunkeihin matkustat?**

*Which towns are you travelling to?*

<b>Mitä ihmisiä tapasit siellä?</b>	<i>What people did you meet there?</i>
<b>Kelille lähettämme kirjat?</b>	<i>Whom shall we send the books to?</i>
<b>Mitä sää näyttää?</b>	<i>What does the weather look like?</i>
<b>Mitä tämä on?</b>	<i>What is this?</i>
<b>Kenelt näit?</b>	<i>Whom did you see?</i>
<b>Minä päivänä he tulevat?</b>	<i>What day are they coming?</i>

**Kumpi** ‘which of two’ declines like the comparative forms of adjectives (see §85).

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>kumpi</b> which (of two)	kumma/t
<i>Gen.</i>	kumma/n	kump/i/en
<i>Part.</i>	kumpa/a	kump/i/a
<i>Iness.</i>	kumma/ssa	kumm/i/ssa
<i>Elat.</i>	kumma/sta	kumm/i/sta
<i>Illat.</i>	kumpa/an	kump/i/in
<i>Adess.</i>	kumma/lla	kumm/i/lla
<i>Ablat.</i>	kumma/lta	kumm/i/lta
<i>Allat.</i>	kumma/lle	kumm/i/lle
<i>Ess.</i>	kumpa/na	kump/i/na
<i>Transl.</i>	kumma/ksi	kumm/i/ksi

**Kumma/lla puolella olet?**

*Which side are you on?*

**Kumma/ssa huoneessa Reino on?**

*In which room (of the two) is Reino?*

**Kumma/t kengät ostat?**

*Which shoes (of the two pairs) will you buy?*

**Kumpa/an kaupunkiin muutat?**

*Which town (of the two) are you moving to?*

**Kumma/lle annat lahjan?**

*To whom (of the two) will you give the present?*

The interrogative pronouns **millainen** and **minkälainen** ‘what kind of’ decline like **ihminen** nominals (§20.1).

<b>Millainen sää on ulkona?</b>	<i>What is the weather like outside?</i>
<b>Minkälais/ta lihaa teillä on?</b>	<i>What kind of meat do you have?</i>
<b>Millaise/n palkan saat?</b>	<i>What kind of salary do you get?</i>

**Minkälaise/ssa lentokoneessa pääministeri saapuu?**

*In what kind of aeroplane is the Prime Minister arriving?*

**Millais/i/a vieraita teille tulee?**

*What kind of guests are you having?*



## §57 INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

The most common indefinite pronouns are **joku** ‘someone’, **jokin** ‘something’, **(ei) kukaan** ‘no one’, **(ei) mikään** ‘nothing’, **jompikumpi** ‘either’, **kumpikin** ‘each (of two)’ and **kukin** ‘each one, everyone’. **Joku** is a two-part pronoun: both **jo-** and **-ku** inflect for a given ending.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>joku</b> someone	jo/t/ku/t
<i>Gen.</i>	jo/n/ku/n	jo/i/den/ku/i/den
<i>Part.</i>	jo/ta/ku/ta	jo/i/ta/ku/i/ta
<i>Iness.</i>	jo/ssa/ku/ssa	jo/i/ssa/ku/i/ssa
<i>Elat.</i>	jo/sta/ku/sta	jo/i/sta/ku/i/sta
<i>Illat.</i>	jo/hon/ku/hun	jo/i/hin/ku/i/hin
<i>Adess.</i>	jo/lla/ku/lla	jo/i/lla/ku/i/lla
<i>Ablat.</i>	jo/lta/ku/lta	jo/i/lta/ku/i/lta
<i>Allat.</i>	jo/lle/ku/lle	jo/i/lle/ku/i/lle
<i>Ess.</i>	jo/na/ku/na	jo/i/na/ku/i/na
<i>Transl.</i>	jo/ksi/ku/ksi	jo/i/ksi/ku/i/ksi

**Joku koputtaa oveen.**

*Someone* is knocking at the door.

**Olet saanut kirjeen jo/lta/ku/lta.**

You have got a letter *from someone*.

**Tunnetko jo/ta/ku/ta hyvää lääkäriä?**

Do you know a (‘any’) good doctor?

**Joi/den/ku/i/den mielestä meidän pitäisi lähteä jo nyt.**

In the opinion of *some* we ought to leave right now.

**Jo/lla/ku/lla on avaimet.**

*Someone* has the keys.

**Joi/hin/ku/i/hin ei voi luottaa.**

*Some* people cannot be trusted.

**Pitäisin enemmän jo/sta/ku/sta toisesta.**

I would prefer *someone* else.

In the pronoun **jokin** ‘something’, **-kin** is an enclitic particle, so that number and case endings are placed in the middle of the word. In case forms ending in **-a** (e.g. **-lla**, **-ta**, **-sta**) the **-k-** of this particle may be dropped, especially in the spoken language but also often in the written language.

	<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>jokin</b> something		jo/t/kin	
<i>Gen.</i>	jo/n/kin		jo/i/den/kin	
<i>Part.</i>	jo/ta/kin	(~ jotain)	jo/i/ta/kin	(~ joitain)
<i>Iness.</i>	jo/ssa/kin	(~ jossain)	jo/i/ssa/kin	(~ joissain)
<i>Elat.</i>	jo/sta/kin	(~ jostain)	jo/i/sta/kin	(~ joistain)
<i>Illat.</i>	jo/hon/kin		jo/i/hin/kin	
<i>Adess.</i>	jo/lla/kin	(~ jollain)	jo/i/lla/kin	(~ joillain)
<i>Ablat.</i>	jo/lta/kin	(~ joltain)	jo/i/lta/kin	(~ joiltain)
<i>Allat.</i>	jo/lle/kin		jo/i/lle/kin	
<i>Ess.</i>	jo/na/kin	(~ jonain)	jo/i/na/kin	(~ joinain)
<i>Transl.</i>	jo/ksi/kin		jo/i/ksi/kin	

**Olohuonessa liikkuu jokin.**

*Something* is moving in the living room.

**Jo/na/kin sunnuntaina lähden hiihtämään.**

*One Sunday* I'll go skiing.

**Jo/lla/kin tavalla aion myydä sen.**

Somehow ('in *some way*') I'm going to sell it.

**Sinulla on aina jo/i/ta/kin esteitä.**

There is always something that prevents you ('you always have *some obstacles*').

**Söisin mielelläni jo/ta/kin.**

I would like to eat *something*.

**Jo/t/kin asiat ovat hyvin tärkeitä.**

*Some things* are very important.

**Olen lukenut sen jo/sta/kin.**

I have read it ('*from*') *somewhere*.

**Jo/i/hin/kin ihmisiin ei voi uskoa.**

*Some people* cannot be believed.

**Jo/i/lle/kin asioille ei voi mitään.**

There are *some things* one can't do anything about.

**Olli on jo/ssa/kin ulkona.**

Olli is *somewhere* outside.

As the examples show, **jokin** may sometimes be used to refer to people as well, especially in the spoken language.

The negative equivalent of **joku** is (ei) **kukaan** 'no one, anyone'; **-kaan** ~ **-kään** is an enclitic particle, and so the other endings appear before it. **Kukaan** usually occurs together with the negation verb. The stem for most of

the singular forms is **kene-**, and for the plural forms **ke-**; cf. the declension of **kuka** above (§56). There are also some shorter alternative forms in the singular.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>(ei) kukaan</b> no one	(eivät) ke/t/kään
<i>Gen.</i>	(ei) kene/n/kään	(ei) ke/i/den/kään
<i>Part.</i>	(ei) ke/tä/än	(ei) ke/i/tään
<i>Iness.</i>	(ei) kene/ssä/kään (~ kessään)	(ei) ke/i/ssä/kään
<i>Elat.</i>	(ei) kene/stä/kään (~ kestään)	(ei) ke/i/stä/kään
<i>Illat.</i>	(ei) kene/en/kään (~ kehenkään)	(ei) ke/i/hin/kään
<i>Adess.</i>	(ei) kene/llä/kään (~ kellään)	(ei) ke/i/llä/kään
<i>Ablat.</i>	(ei) kene/ltä/kään (~ keltään)	(ei) ke/i/ltä/kään
<i>Allat.</i>	(ei) kene/lle/kään (~ kellekään)	(ei) ke/i/lle/kään

**Kukaan ei usko minua.**

*No one* believes me.

**En usko ke/tä/än.**

I don't believe *anyone*.

**Kene/ssä/kään ei ole vikaa.**

It's *no one's* fault.

**Onko täällä ke/tä/än?**

Is there *anybody* here?

**Ke/i/tään ei ole näkynyt.**

*No one* was to be seen.

**Älä tee kene/lle/kään pahaa!**

Do no harm *to anyone*.

**Tämä ei ole kene/stä/kään hyvää.**

*No one* thinks this is good ('This is not good *in anyone's opinion*').

**Ke/t/kään eivät kannata ehdotusta.**

*Nobody* supports the proposal.

**En saa apua kene/ltä/kään.**

I get no help *from anyone*.

**Ke/i/llä/kään ei ole varaa tähän.**

*No one* can afford this.

The declension of **(ei) mikään** 'nothing', the negative equivalent of **jokin**, is similar; cf. **mikä** (§56). For both **mikä** and **(ei) mikään** almost all the plural forms are the same as the corresponding singular ones.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>(ei) mikään</b> nothing	(eivät) mi/t/kään
<i>Gen.</i>	(ei) mi/n/kään	(other forms as singular)
<i>Part.</i>	(ei) mi/tä/än	
<i>Iness.</i>	(ei) mi/ssä/än	
<i>Elat.</i>	(ei) mi/stä/än	
<i>Illat.</i>	(ei) mi/hin/kään	
<i>Adess.</i>	(ei) mi/llä/än	
<i>Ablat.</i>	(ei) mi/ltä/än	
<i>Allat.</i>	(ei) mi/lle/kään	
<i>Ess.</i>	(ei) mi/nä/än	
<i>Transl.</i>	(ei) mi/ksi/kään	

**Mikään ei auta.**

*Nothing* helps.

**En näe mi/tä/an.**

I don't see *anything*.

<b>Siellä ei ole mi/tä/än.</b>	There is <i>nothing</i> there.
<b>Hän ei välitä mi/stä/än.</b>	He/she doesn't care <i>about anything</i> .
<b>Tyynestä ei ole mi/hin/kään.</b>	Tyynne is not good <i>for anything</i> .

**En voi auttaa teitä mi/llä/än tavalla.**

I cannot help you *in any way*.

**Siitä ei ole mi/tä/än hyötyä.**

That is *no use*.

**Mi/t/kään selitykset eivät auta.**

*No explanations help.*

**Mi/stä/än maasta ei tule enemmän edustajia kuin Suomesta.**

From *no* country are there coming more representatives than from Finland.

**Mi/n/kään koneen ominaisuudet eivät ole paremmat kuin tämän.**

*No machine has better qualities than this one ('the qualities of no machine are...').*

**Mi/ssä/än tapauksessa en suostu tähän.**

*On no account do I agree to this.*

**Mi/nä/än vuonna ei ole satanut niin paljon kuin tänä vuonna.**

*In no year has it rained as much as this year.*

**Jompikumpi** 'either, one or the other' is similar to **joku** in that both **jompi** and **kumpi** decline. In **kumpikin** 'each of two, both', the first part declines exactly like the pronoun **kumpi** (§56) and the particle **-kin** is added. **Kumpikaan** 'neither' declines like **kumpikin**.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>jompikumpi</b> either	jomma/t/kumma/t
<i>Gen.</i>	jomma/n/kumma/n	jomp/i/en/kump/i/en
<i>Part.</i>	jompa/a/kumpa/a	jomp/i/a/kump/i/a
<i>Iness.</i>	jomma/ssa/kumma/ssa	jomm/i/ssa/kumm/i/ssa
<i>Elat.</i>	jomma/sta/kumma/sta	jomm/i/sta/kumm/i/sta
<i>Illat.</i>	jompa/an/kumpa/an	jomp/i/in/kump/i/in
<i>Adess.</i>	jomma/lla/kumma/lla	jomm/i/lla/kumm/i/lla
<i>Abl.</i>	jomma/lta/kumma/lta	jomm/i/lta/kumm/i/lta
<i>Allat.</i>	jomma/lle/kumma/lle	jomm/i/lle/kumm/i/lle
<i>Ess.</i>	jompa/na/kumpa/na	jomp/i/na/kump/i/na
<i>Transl.</i>	jomma/ksi/kumma/ksi	jomm/i/ksi/kumm/i/ksi

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>kumpikin</b> each of two	kumma/t/kin
<i>Gen.</i>	kumma/n/kin	kump/i/en/kin
<i>Part.</i>	kumpa/a/kin	kump/i/a/kin

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Iness.</i>	kumma/ssa/kin	kumm/i/ssa/kin
<i>Elat.</i>	kumma/sta/kin	kumm/i/sta/kin
<i>Illat.</i>	kumpa/an/kin	kump/i/in/kin
<i>Adess.</i>	kumma/lla/kin	kumm/i/lla/kin
<i>Ablat.</i>	kumma/lta/kin	kumm/i/lta/kin
<i>Allat.</i>	kumma/lle/kin	kumm/i/lle/kin
<i>Ess.</i>	kumpa/na/kin	kump/i/na/kin
<i>Transl.</i>	kumma/ksi/kin	kumm/i/ksi/kin

***Jompikumpi ehdotus voittaa.***

*One or the other proposal will win.*

***Kumpikaan ei voita.***

*Neither will win.*

***En tunne kumpa/a/kaan heistä.***

*I don't know either of them.*

***jomma/ssa/kumma/ssa tapauksessa***

*in either case*

***Pidän kumma/sta/kin.***

*I like both of them.*

***Tulen jompa/na/kumpa/na pääsiäispäivänä.***

*I'll come on one of the Easter holidays (i.e. the Sunday or the Monday).*

***En tule kumpa/na/kaan päivänä.***

*I'm not coming on either day.*

***Kumma/sta/kin talosta tulee yksi mies.***

*From each of the (two) houses comes one man.*

***Kumpa/an/kin perheeseen syntyi tyttö.***

*Into both families a girl was born.*

***Voit ottaa jomma/t/kumma/t kengät.***

*You can take either pair of shoes.*

***Kumma/t/kin häät ovat ennen joulua.***

*Both weddings are before Christmas.*

***En pidä kumma/sta/kaan kirjasta.***

*I don't like either of the books.*

***Sain kirjan jomma/lta/kumma/lta, en muista keneltä.***

*I got a letter from one of them, I don't remember which.*

**Hän ei osaa kumpa/a/kaan kieltä.**

He/she does not speak *either* language.

**Kumma/n/kin kengät ovat eteisessä.**

The shoes *of both* are in the hall.

Similarly, in the declension of **kukin** ‘each, everyone’ the case endings are placed before the particle **-kin**.

	<i>Singular</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>kukin</b> each
<i>Gen.</i>	ku/ <b>n</b> /kin
<i>Part.</i>	ku/ta/kin
<i>Iness.</i>	ku/ssa/kin
<i>Elat.</i>	ku/sta/kin
<i>Illat.</i>	ku/hun/kin
<i>Adess.</i>	ku/lla/kin
<i>Ablat.</i>	ku/lta/kin
<i>Allat.</i>	ku/lle/kin
<i>Ess.</i>	ku/na/kin
<i>Transl.</i>	ku/ksi/kin

**Kukin saa yhden voileivän.**

*Everyone* gets one sandwich.

**Annamme ku/lle/kin yhden voileivän.**

We will give *everyone* one sandwich.

**Ku/lla/kin on huolensa.**

*Everyone* has his/her worries.

**Ku/ssa/kin talossa asuu neljä perhettä.**

*In each* house there live four families.

**Ku/n/kin täytyy tehdä kaikkensa.**

*Everyone* must do his/her best (‘his/her all’).

**Maksamme sata markkaa ku/lta/kin sivulta.**

We pay 100 marks *for each* page.

**Perhedymme ku/hun/kin tapaukseen erikseen.**

We investigate *each* case separately.

Note further the following words which decline like the corresponding nouns and adjectives.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Genitive</i>	<i>Partitive</i>
<b>eräs</b>	a certain	erää/n	eräs/tä
<b>jokainen</b>	every, each one	jokaise/n	jokais/ta
<b>kaikki</b>	all, everything	kaike/n	kaikke/a

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Genitive</i>	<i>Partitive</i>
<b>molemma/t</b>	both	molemp/i/en	molemp/i/a
<b>moni</b>	many (a)	mone/n	mon/ta
<b>muutama</b>	some, a few	muutama/n	muutama/a
<b>muu</b>	other, else	muu/n	muu/ta
<b>toinen</b>	another, other	toise/n	tois/ta
<b>usea</b>	many (a), several	usea/n	usea/a

**Molemma/t**, **muutama** and **usea** occur in both singular and plural.

**Melkein jokaise/lla perheellä on televisio.**

Almost *every* family has a television.

**Kaikki tulevat meille illalla.**

*Everyone* comes to us in the evening.

**Kaik/i/lla on hauskaa.**

*Everyone* has a nice time.

**Molemma/t lapset ovat koulussa.**

*Both* the children are at school.

**Annan banaanin molemmi/lle.**

I (will) give a banana *to both*.

**erää/nä päivänä viime viikolla**

*one/a certain* day last week

**Teos on erää/llä tavalla hyvä.**

*In one* way the work is good.

**Eräs toinen tyttö tuli sisään.**

Another ('*a certain* other') girl came in.

**Tiedän kaike/n.**

I know *everything*.

**Moni yritys epäonnistuu.**

*Many an* attempt fails.

**Tuli mon/ta vierasta.**

There came *many* guests.

**Olen ollut mon/i/ssa maissa (~ mone/ssa maassa).**

I have been *in many* countries.

**Moni/en mielestä tämä on huono ehdotus.**

*In many people's* opinion this is a bad proposal.

**Mone/lla yrittäjällä on vaikeuksia.**

*Many an* entrepreneur has difficulties.

**Tunnen mon/i/a ihmisiä.**

I know *many* people.

**Muu/t ovat eri mieltä.**

*The others/the rest* are of a different opinion.

**Olen käynyt mu/i/ssa/kin Pohjoismaissa.**

I have also visited *the other* Nordic countries.

**Ostin takin muutama/lla markalla.**

I bought a coat *for a few* marks.

**Muutama/t ihmiset väittävät, että...**

*Some/a few* people claim that...

**Työ on valmis muutama/ssa minuutissa.**

The work will be ready *in a few* minutes.

**muutam/i/a vuosia sitten**

*a few* years ago

**Selitän asian muutama/lla sanalla.**

I will explain the matter *in a few* words.

**Tämä on toinen asia.**

This is *another* matter.

**Usea/t ihmiset sanovat, että...**

*Many/several* people say that...

**use/i/ssa tapauksissa**

*in many/several* cases

**Use/i/den mielestä hallitus on kelvoton.**

*In many people's* opinion the government is no good.

**En ole nähnyt Osmoa use/i/hin vuosiin.**

I haven't seen Osmo *for several* years.

## §58 RELATIVE PRONOUNS

The most common relative pronoun is **joka** 'who, which', the final syllable of which occurs only in the nominative singular and plural and the genitive singular.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>joka</b> who, which, that	jo/t/ka
<i>Gen.</i>	jo/n/ka	jo/i/den
<i>Part.</i>	jo/ta	jo/i/ta
<i>Iness.</i>	jo/ssa	jo/i/ssa



	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Elat.</i>	jo/sta	jo/i/sta
<i>Illat.</i>	jo/hon	jo/i/hin
<i>Adess.</i>	jo/lla	jo/i/lla
<i>Ablat.</i>	jo/lta	jo/i/lta
<i>Allat.</i>	jo/lle	jo/i/lle
<i>Ess.</i>	jo/na	jo/i/na
<i>Transl.</i>	jo/ksi	jo/i/ksi

**Mikä** (mentioned above as an interrogative pronoun, §56) is also used as a relative pronoun. With the exception of the nominative and accusative the plural forms are the same as the corresponding singular ones; otherwise it declines like **joka**.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<b>mikä</b> which, that	mi/t/kä
<i>Gen.</i>	mi/n/kä	(other forms as singular)
<i>Part.</i>	mi/tä	
<i>Iness.</i>	mi/ssä	
<i>Elat.</i>	mi/stä	
<i>Illat.</i>	mi/hin	
<i>Adess.</i>	mi/llä	
<i>Ablat.</i>	mi/ltä	
<i>Allat.</i>	mi/lle	
<i>Ess.</i>	mi/nä	
<i>Transl.</i>	mi/ksi	

**Joka** is a more common relative pronoun than **mikä**, and it is mainly, but not always, used to refer to entities that are alive. **Mikä** is mostly used only for inanimate entities; it is also used when the reference is to a clause or to an expression containing a superlative.

**Hän on mies, joka ei pelkää.**

He is a man *who* does not fear.

**Tämä on kirja, jota en halua lukea.**

This is a book *that* I don't want to read.

**Talo jo/ssa asun on Vilhonkadulla.**

The house *where* I live is in Vilho's Street.

**Sain lahjan, jo/sta on hyötyä.**

I got a present which is useful (*'of which is use'*).

**Ne olivat aikoja, jo/t/ka eivät palaa.**

They were times *that* will never return.

**Tapahtumat *jo/i/sta* kuulin olivat kauheita.**

The events *which* I heard *about* were terrible.

**Se on paras paikka *mi/n/kä* tiedän.**

It is the best place *that* I know.

**Tässä ovat kirjeet, *mi/t/kä* lähetit minulle.**

Here are the letters *that* you sent to me.

**Tuo on kertomus, *jo/hon* en usko.**

That is a story *that* I don't believe.

**Tuli sade, *mikä* esti matkamme.**

It rained, *which* prevented our trip.

## 14 TENSES

- *Present*
- *Past*
- *Perfect*
- *Pluperfect*
- *Negative forms*

### §59 PRESENT TENSE

Finnish has four tenses: two simple (present and past) and two compound (perfect and pluperfect). Compare present **sano/n** ‘I say’, past **sano/i/n** ‘I said’, perfect **ole/n sano/nut** ‘I have said’ and pluperfect **ol/i/n sano/nut** ‘I had said’.

The present tense is used for non-past time: usually a time simultaneous with the moment of utterance, and sometimes also future time, i.e. later than the moment of utterance. It is also used for general eternal truths of the kind **leijona on eläin** ‘the lion is an animal’; **leijonat ovat eläimiä** ‘lions are animals’.

There is no separate ending for the present. But note that in the third person singular the short final vowel of the stem lengthens, i.e. doubles (§24). Otherwise only the normal personal endings are added to the inflectional stem (§23).

**Kalle on ulkona.**

Kalle *is* outside.

**(Minä) ole/n kotona.**

*I am* at home.

**(Me) lue/mme sanomalehteä.**

*We are reading* the newspaper.

**Pertti luke/e sanomalehteä.**

Pertti *is reading* the newspaper.

**Mitä sano/tte?**

What do *you say*?

**Auto seiso/o tallissa.**

The car *is standing* in the garage.

**Ritva halua/a olutta.**

Ritva *wants* some beer.

**Tuula ja Leena lähte/vät Espanjaan.**

Tuula and Leena *are going* to Spain.

**Mattikin lähte/e sinne.**

Matti *is going* there too.

### §60 PAST TENSE

The past tense is used for past time, to express an action which took place before the moment of utterance. The past tense ending is **-i**, which is added to the inflectional stem (§23) and is followed by the personal ending.

The past tense ending is **-i**, which is added to the inflectional stem (§23).

The verbs **sano/a** ‘say’, **puhu/a** ‘speak’ and **anta/a** ‘give’ thus conjugate as follows in the past tense. For consonant gradation see §15.

<i>First p. sing.</i>	<b>(minä)</b>	<b>sano/i/n</b>	I said
		<b>puhu/i/n</b>	I spoke
		<b>anno/i/n</b>	I gave
<i>Second p. sing.</i>	<b>(sinä)</b>	<b>sano/i/t</b>	you said
		<b>puhu/i/t</b>	you spoke
		<b>anno/i/t</b>	you gave
<i>Third p. sing.</i>	<b>hän</b>	<b>sano/i</b>	he/she said
	<b>äiti</b>	<b>puhu/i</b>	mother spoke
	<b>Kalle</b>	<b>anto/i</b>	Kalle gave
<i>First p. pl.</i>	<b>(me)</b>	<b>sano/i/mme</b>	we said
		<b>puhu/i/mme</b>	we spoke
		<b>anno/i/mme</b>	we gave
<i>Second p. pl.</i>	<b>(te)</b>	<b>sano/i/tte</b>	you said
		<b>puhu/i/tte</b>	you spoke
		<b>anno/i/tte</b>	you gave
<i>Third p. pl.</i>	<b>he</b>	<b>sano/i/vat</b>	they said
	<b>naiset</b>	<b>puhu/i/vat</b>	the women spoke
	<b>miehet</b>	<b>anto/i/vat</b>	the men gave

Before the past tense **-i** the usual vowel change rules apply (§16); cf. above **anno/i/n**, etc. The table below gives first the basic form of the verb (first infinitive), then the third person singular of the present as an example of the inflectional stem, and the section number (§) explaining the vowel change in question, and finally the third person singular of the past tense (without consonant gradation) and the first person singular of the past tense (with consonant gradation).

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. present</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Third p. sing. past</i>	<i>First p. sing. past</i>
<b>kerto/a</b>	tell	kerto/o	16(1)	kerto/i	kerro/i/n
<b>asu/a</b>	live	asu/u	“	asu/i	asu/i/n
<b>pysy/ä</b>	stay	pysy/y	“	pysy/i	pysy/i/n
<b>luke/a</b>	read	luke/e	16(5)	luk/i	lu/i/n
<b>etsi/ä</b>	look for	etsi/i	16(6)	ets/i	ets/i/n
<b>oppi/a</b>	learn	oppi/i	“	opp/i	op/i/n
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	vetä/ä	16(7)	vet/i	ved/i/n

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. present</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>Third p. sing. past</i>	<i>First p. sing. past</i>
<b>yrittä/ä</b>	try	yrittä/ä	16(7)	yritt <i>ī</i>	yrit <i>ī</i> /n
<b>anta/a</b>	give	anta/a	16(8)	<b>ant<i>o</i>/i</b>	ann <i>o</i> /i/n
<b>sata/a</b>	rain	sata/a	“	<b>sat<i>o</i>/i</b>	
<b>jaka/a</b>	divide	jaka/a	“	<b>jak<i>o</i>/i</b>	jao <i>ī</i> /n
<b>muista/a</b>	remember	muista/a	16(8)	<b>muist<i>i</i></b>	muist <i>i</i> /n
<b>otta/a</b>	take	otta/a	“	<b>ott<i>i</i></b>	ot <i>i</i> /n
<b>rakasta/a</b>	love	rakasta/a	“	rakast <i>i</i>	rakast <i>i</i> /n
<b>osta/a</b>	buy	ost <i>a</i> /a	“	<b>ost<i>i</i></b>	ost <i>i</i> /n
<b>saa/da</b>	get	saa	16(2)	sa <i>ī</i>	sa <i>ī</i> /n
<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	myy	“	my <i>ī</i>	my <i>ī</i> /n
<b>voi/da</b>	be able	voi	16(4)	vo <i>ī</i>	vo <i>ī</i> /n
<b>juo/da</b>	drink	juo	16(3)	jo <i>ī</i>	jo <i>ī</i> /n
<b>pysäköi/dä</b>	park	pysäköi	16(4)	pysäkö <i>ī</i>	pysäkö <i>ī</i> /n
<b>luennoi/da</b>	lecture	luennoi	“	luenno <i>ī</i>	luenno <i>ī</i> /n
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	nouse/e	16(5)	nous <i>i</i>	nous <i>i</i> /n
<b>tul/la</b>	come	tule/e	“	tul <i>ī</i>	tul <i>ī</i> /n
<b>men/nä</b>	go	mene/e	“	men <i>ī</i>	men <i>ī</i> /n
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	ajattele/e	“	ajattel <i>ī</i>	ajattel <i>ī</i> /n
<b>kierrel/lä</b>	circle	kiertele/e	“	kiertel <i>ī</i>	kiertel <i>ī</i> /n
<b>julkais/ta</b>	publish	julkaise/e	“	julkais <i>ī</i>	julkais <i>ī</i> /n
<b>tarvit/a</b>	need	tarvitse/e	“	tarvits <i>ī</i>	tarvits <i>ī</i> /n
<b>häirit/ä</b>	disturb	häiritsee	“	häirit <i>s</i> <i>ī</i>	häirit <i>s</i> <i>ī</i> /n
<b>paet/a</b>	flee	pakene/e	“	paken <i>ī</i>	paken <i>ī</i> /n

In some verbs of the **anta/a** type, where because of the deletion of **-a** or **-ä** the short consonant **-t-** occurs immediately before the past tense ending, this **-t-** changes to **-s-**. This most often happens when the **-t-** occurs after two vowels or after **l, n** or **r**.

**-t-** sometimes changes to **-s-** if, after the deletion of **-a** or **-ä**, it occurs immediately before the past tense ending.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. present</i>	<i>Third p. sing. past</i>	<i>First p. sing. past</i>
<b>tietä/ä</b>	know	tietä/ä	ties <i>ī</i>	ties <i>ī</i> /n
<b>löytä/ä</b>	find	löytä/ä	löys <i>ī</i>	löys <i>ī</i> /n
<b>huuta/a</b>	shout	huuta/a	huus <i>ī</i>	huus <i>ī</i> /n
<b>piirtä/ä</b>	draw	piirtä/ä	piirs <i>ī</i>	piirs <i>ī</i> /n
<b>työntä/ä</b>	push	työntä/ä	työns <i>ī</i>	työns <i>ī</i> /n

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. present</i>	<i>Third p. sing. past</i>	<i>First p. sing. past</i>
<b>lentä/ä</b>	fly	lent <u>ä</u> /ä	lens <u>i</u>	lens <u>i</u> /n
<b>kiertä/ä</b>	turn	kiert <u>ä</u> /ä	kiers <u>i</u>	kiers <u>i</u> /n
<b>pyytä/ä</b>	ask	pyyt <u>ä</u> /ä	pyys <u>i</u>	pyys <u>i</u> /n
<b>kiiltä/ä</b>	shine	kiilt <u>ä</u> /ä	kiils <u>i</u>	kiils <u>i</u> /n

Verbs to which this rule does not apply include **pitä/ä** ‘keep’, **vetä/ä** ‘pull’, **sietä/ä** ‘bear’, **hoita/a** ‘take care of’, cf. **hän pit/i** ‘he/she kept’, **pid/i/n** ‘I held’, **Reijo vet/i** ‘Reijo pulled’, **ved/i/n** ‘I pulled’, etc.

The important group of **huomat/a** verbs form their past tense according to the following special change.

The past tense of **huomat/a** verbs is formed by changing the last **-a** or **-ä** of the inflectional stem to **-s-**, and then adding the past tense **-i**.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. present</i>	<i>Third p. sing. past</i>	<i>First p. sing. past</i>
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	huomaa <u>a</u>	huomas <u>i</u>	huomas <u>i</u> /n
<b>osat/a</b>	know how	osaa <u>a</u>	osas <u>i</u>	osas <u>i</u> /n
<b>hypät/ä</b>	jump	hyppää <u>ä</u>	hyppäs <u>i</u>	hyppäs <u>i</u> /n
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	pelkää <u>ä</u>	pelkäs <u>i</u>	pelkäs <u>i</u> /n
<b>maat/a</b>	lie	makaa <u>a</u>	makas <u>i</u>	makas <u>i</u> /n
<b>tavat/a</b>	meet	tapaa <u>a</u>	tapas <u>i</u>	tapas <u>i</u> /n
<b>määrät/ä</b>	order	määrää <u>ä</u>	määräs <u>i</u>	määräs <u>i</u> /n
<b>halut/a</b>	want	halua <u>a</u>	halus <u>i</u>	halus <u>i</u> /n
<b>tarjot/a</b>	offer	tarjoa <u>a</u>	tarjos <u>i</u>	tarjos <u>i</u> /n

The examples below illustrate the use of the past tense.

<b>Koira makas/i lattialla.</b>	The dog <i>lay</i> on the floor.
<b>Oskari anto/i minulle suukon.</b>	Oskari <i>gave</i> me a kiss.
<b>Poliisi kysyi nimeäni.</b>	The policeman <i>asked</i> me my name.
<b>Kuka siellä oli?</b>	Who <i>was</i> there?
<b>Joi/t/ko punaviiniä eilen?</b>	<i>Did you drink</i> red wine yesterday?
<b>Mitä he tek/i/vät illalla?</b>	What <i>did they do</i> in the evening?
<b>Mitä te/i/tte illalla?</b>	What <i>did you do</i> in the evening?
<b>Niin me ajattel/i/mme/kin.</b>	That’s just what <i>we thought</i> .
<b>Ajo/i/n Turusta Helsinkiin kahdessa tunnissa.</b>	<i>I drove</i> from Turku to Helsinki in two hours.
<b>Mitä ost/i/t Kaleville lahjaksi?</b>	What <i>did you buy</i> as a present for Kalevi?

<b>He läht/i/vät jo aamulla.</b>	<i>They left ('already') in the morning.</i>
<b>Ties/i/tte/kö tämän?</b>	<i>Did you know this?</i>
<b>Keijo avas/i vieraille oven.</b>	<i>Keijo opened the door for the guests.</i>

Note that the verb **käy/dä** 'go' has an exceptional past tense: **käv/i**, cf. **käv/i/n** 'I went', **he käv/i/vät** 'they went'.

## §61 PERFECT TENSE

The perfect tense is used for past actions whose influence is in some way still valid at the moment of utterance: the perfect is the tense of 'present relevance'. It is formed with the present tense of the auxiliary verb **ol/la** 'be' inflected for person, followed by the past participle in the singular or plural form according to the number of the subject. The participle ending is **-nut ~ -nyt**; e.g. (**minä**) **ole/n sanonut** 'I have said', (**sinä**) **ole/t luke/nut** 'you have read', **hän on syö/nyt** 'he/she has eaten'.

The past participle is formed by adding the ending **-nut ~ -nyt** to the infinitive stem (§23).

If the infinitive stem ends in a consonant

- which is **l, r** or **s**, the **n** of the participle changes to a second **l, r** or **s**;
- which is **t**, this **t** changes to **n**.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Past participle</i>	<i>Cf. third p. sing. present</i>
<b>osta/a</b>	buy	osta/ <b>nut</b>	osta/a
<b>itke/ä</b>	cry	itke/ <b>nyt</b>	itke/e
<b>seiso/a</b>	stand	seiso/ <b>nut</b>	seiso/o
<b>tanssi/a</b>	dance	tanssi/ <b>nut</b>	tanssi/i
<b>löytä/ä</b>	find	löytä/ <b>nyt</b>	löytä/ä
<b>anta/a</b>	give	anta/ <b>nut</b>	anta/a
<b>näyttä/ä</b>	show	näyttä/ <b>nyt</b>	näyttä/ä
<b>synty/ä</b>	be born	synty/ <b>nyt</b>	synty/y
<b>saa/da</b>	get	saa/ <b>nut</b>	saa
<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	myy/ <b>nyt</b>	myy
<b>juo/da</b>	drink	juo/ <b>nut</b>	juo
<b>soi/da</b>	ring	soi/ <b>nut</b>	soi
<b>vartioi/da</b>	guard	vartioi/ <b>nut</b>	vartioi
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	nous/ <b>sut</b>	nouse/e

<b>pes/tä</b>	wash	<b>pes/syt</b>	pese/e
<b>tul/la</b>	come	<b>tul/lut</b>	tule/e
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>ol/lut</b>	on
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	<b>ajatel/lut</b>	ajattele/e
<b>pur/ra</b>	bite	<b>pur/rut</b>	pure/e
<b>väitel/lä</b>	dispute	<b>väitel/lyt</b>	väittele/e
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	<b>huoman/nut</b>	huomaa
<b>osat/a</b>	know how	<b>osan/nut</b>	osaa
<b>halut/a</b>	want	<b>halun/nut</b>	halua/a
<b>veikat/a</b>	bet	<b>veikan/nut</b>	veikkaa
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	<b>pelän/nyt</b>	pelkää
<b>hypät/ä</b>	jump	<b>hypän/nyt</b>	hyppää
<b>kelvat/a</b>	be good enough	<b>kelvan/nut</b>	kelpaa
<b>tarvit/a</b>	need	<b>tarvin/nut</b>	tarvitse/e
<b>paet/a</b>	flee	<b>paen/nut</b>	pakene/e
<b>lämmet/ä</b>	become warm	<b>lämmen/nyt</b>	lämpene/e
<b>havait/a</b>	observe	<b>havain/nut</b>	havaitse/e

The inflectional stem of the past participle is formed by changing **-ut ~ -yt** to **-ee-**, e.g. sano/**nut** : sano/**nee-**, and any endings are added to this stem. The different persons of the perfect tense are thus as follows.

<i>First p. sing.</i>	<b>(minä)</b>	<b>ole/n sano/nut</b>	I have said
		<b>ole/n ol/lut</b>	I have been
		<b>ole/n huoman/nut</b>	I have noticed
<i>Second p. sing.</i>	<b>(sinä)</b>	<b>ole/t sano/nut</b>	you have said
		<b>ole/t ol/lut</b>	you have been
		<b>ole/t huoman/nut</b>	you have noticed
<i>Third p. sing.</i>	<b>hän</b>	<b>on sano/nut</b>	he/she has said
		<b>on ol/lut</b>	he/she has been
		<b>on huoman/nut</b>	he/she has noticed
<i>First p. pl.</i>	<b>(me)</b>	<b>ole/mme sano/neet</b>	we have said
		<b>ole/mme ol/leet</b>	we have been
		<b>ole/mme huoman/neet</b>	we have noticed
<i>Second p. pl.</i>	<b>(te)</b>	<b>ole/tte sano/neet</b>	you have said
		<b>ole/tte ol/leet</b>	you have been
		<b>ole/tte huoman/neet</b>	you have noticed
<i>Third p. pl.</i>	<b>he</b>	<b>ovat sano/neet</b>	they have said
		<b>ovat ol/leet</b>	they have been
		<b>ovat huoman/neet</b>	they have noticed

Below are some examples of the use of the perfect.

**Keinänen on matkusta/nut Espanjaan.**

Keinänen *has travelled* to Spain.



**On/ko johtaja men/nyt lounaalle?**

*Has the manager gone to lunch?*

**Ole/tte/ko ennen ol/leet Suomessa?**

*Have you been in Finland before?*

**Kari ja Pertti ovat lähte/neet pois.**

*Kari and Pertti have gone away.*

**Ole/t/ko jo syö/nyt?**

*Have you already eaten?*

**Ole/n maan/nut sängyssä koko päivän.**

*I have lain in bed all day.*

**Ole/tte/ko luke/neet Salaman uusimman kirjan?**

*Have you read Salama's latest book?*

The perfect can also occur in the conditional mood, when the ending **-isi-** is added to the auxiliary **olla**, and in the potential mood, which is formed from an exceptional stem of the verb **olla**, **liene-**, followed by a personal ending. After these forms of the auxiliary the past participle follows (see Chapter 15).

**Ol/isi/n ol/lut iloinen, jos ol/isi/t tul/lut.**

*I would have been pleased if you had ('would have') come.*

**Ol/isi/mme lähte/neet Espanjaan, jos meillä ol/isi ol/lut rahaa.**

*We would have gone to Spain if we had ('would have') had money.*

**Ahtisaari liene/e käy/nyt Marokossa.**

*Ahtisaari has probably been to Morocco.*

**He liene/vät hankki/neet auton.**

*They (have) probably obtained a car.*

## §62 PLUPERFECT TENSE

The pluperfect is used for actions which have taken place before some point of time in the past. It is formed from the past tense of **ol/la** (**ol/i/n**, **ol/i/t**, **ol/i**, **ol/i/mme**, **ol/i/tte**, **ol/i/vat**), followed by the past participle (§61).

**Ol/i/n juuri tul/lut kotiin, kun soitit.**

*I had just come home when you rang.*

**Ol/i/mme tul/leet kotiin...**

*We had come home...*

**Hän ol/i opiskel/lut suomea ennen kuin hän tuli Suomeen.**

*He had studied Finnish before he came to Finland.*

**Kalle oli odotta/nut kymmenen minuuttia kun tulin.**

Kalle *had waited/been waiting* ten minutes when I came.

**He oli/vat odotta/neet...**

They *had waited*...

## §63 NEGATIVE FORMS

All negative forms are based on the negation verb **en, et, ei, emme, ette, eivät**. The present tense negative has been discussed earlier (§29); here the negation verb is followed by a minimal stem form of the main verb subject to consonant gradation.

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<b>kerro/n</b>	I tell	<b><u>en</u> kerro</b>	I do not tell
<b>kerro/t</b>		<b><u>et</u> kerro</b>	
<b>hän kerto/o</b>		<b>hän <u>ei</u> kerro</b>	
<b>kerro/mme</b>		<b><u>emme</u> kerro</b>	
<b>kerro/tte</b>		<b><u>ette</u> kerro</b>	
<b>he kerto/vat</b>		<b>he <u>eivät</u> kerro</b>	

The negative of the past tense is formed differently: the negation verb is followed by the past participle (§61).

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<b>kerro/i/n</b>	I told	<b><u>en</u> kerto/<u>nut</u></b>	I did not tell
<b>kerro/i/t</b>		<b><u>et</u> kerto/<u>nut</u></b>	
<b>hän kerto/i</b>		<b>hän <u>ei</u> kerto/<u>nut</u></b>	
<b>kerro/i/mme</b>		<b><u>emme</u> kerto/<u>neet</u></b>	
<b>kerro/i/tte</b>		<b><u>ette</u> kerto/<u>neet</u></b>	
<b>he kerto/i/vat</b>		<b>he <u>eivät</u> kerto/<u>neet</u></b>	

Here are some further examples of the formation of the past tense negative.

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<b>tanss/i/n</b>	I danced	<b><u>en</u> tanssi/<u>nut</u></b>	I did not dance
<b>tanss/i/tte</b>	you (pl.) danced	<b><u>ette</u> tanssi/<u>neet</u></b>	
<b>itk/i/t</b>	you (sing.) cried	<b><u>et</u> itke/<u>nyt</u></b>	
<b>hän näytt/i</b>	he/she showed	<b>hän <u>ei</u> näyttä/<u>nyt</u></b>	
<b>he anto/i/vat</b>	they gave	<b>he <u>eivät</u> anta/<u>neet</u></b>	
<b>lu/i/n</b>	I read	<b><u>en</u> luke/<u>nut</u></b>	
<b>ol/i/mme</b>	we were	<b><u>emme</u> ol/<u>leet</u></b>	
<b>ol/i/t</b>	you (sing.) were	<b><u>et</u> ol/<u>lut</u></b>	

<b>nous/i/n</b>	I got up	<b><u>en nous/sut</u></b>
<b>he nous/i/vat</b>	they got up	<b><u>he eivät nous/see</u>t</b>
<b>ajattel/i/mme</b>	we thought	<b><u>emme ajatel/leet</u></b>
<b>Tuula sa/i</b>	Tuula got	<b><u>Tuula ei saa/nut</u></b>
<b>osas/i/mme</b>	we knew how	<b><u>emme osan/neet</u></b>
<b>osas/i/t</b>	you (sing.) knew how	<b><u>et osan/nut</u></b>
<b>hän pelkäs/i</b>	he/she feared	<b><u>hän ei pelän/nyt</u></b>
<b>pelkäs/i/tte</b>	you (pl.) feared	<b><u>ette pelän/neet</u></b>
<b>tarvits/i/n</b>	I needed	<b><u>en tarvin/nut</u></b>
<b>he häirits/i/vät</b>	they disturbed	<b><u>he eivät häirin/neet</u></b>

The negative of the perfect tense is formed from the negation verb followed by **ole** (without a personal ending) and the past participle of the main verb (singular or plural).

*Affirmative*

<b>ole/n osta/nut</b>	I have bought
<b>ole/t osta/nut</b>	you (sing.) have bought
<b>hän on osta/nut</b>	he/she has bought
<b>ole/mme osta/neet</b>	we have bought
<b>ole/tte osta/neet</b>	you (pl.) have bought
<b>he ovat ostaneet</b>	they have bought
<b>ole/n ol/lut</b>	I have been
<b>ole/mme ol/leet</b>	we have been
<b>ole/t näyttä/nyt</b>	you (sing.) have shown
<b>he ovat anta/neet</b>	they have given
<b>ole/mme saa/neet</b>	we have got
<b>ole/n ajatel/lut</b>	I have thought
<b>hän on osan/nut</b>	he/she has known how
<b>ole/mme pelän/neet</b>	we have feared
<b>ole/n tarvin/nut</b>	I have needed
<b>ol/isi/n osta/nut</b>	I would have bought
<b>ol/isi/tte osta/neet</b>	you (pl.) would have bought
<b>he ol/isi/vat osta/neet</b>	they would have bought
<b>hän liene/e osta/nut</b>	he/she has probably bought

*Negative*

<b><u>en ole osta/nut</u></b>	I have not bought
<b><u>et ole osta/nut</u></b>	
<b><u>hän ei ole osta/nut</u></b>	
<b><u>emme ole osta/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>ette ole osta/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>he eivät ole osta/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>en ole ol/lut</u></b>	
<b><u>emme ole ol/leet</u></b>	
<b><u>et ole näyttä/nyt</u></b>	
<b><u>he eivät ole anta/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>emme ole saa/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>en ole ajatel/lut</u></b>	
<b><u>hän ei ole osan/nut</u></b>	
<b><u>emme ole pelän/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>en ole tarvin/nut</u></b>	
<b><u>en ol/isi osta/nut</u></b>	
<b><u>ette ol/isi osta/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>he eivät ol/isi osta/neet</u></b>	
<b><u>hän ei liene osta/nut</u></b>	

The negative of the pluperfect is formed from the negation verb followed by the past participle of **ol/la—ol/lut ~ ol/leet**—and the past participle of the main verb (singular or plural).

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>
<b>ol/i/n osta/nut</b>	I had bought	<b><u>en ol/lut osta/nut</u></b> I had not bought
<b>ol/i/t ostanut</b>	you (sing.) had bought	<b><u>et ol/lut osta/nut</u></b>
<b>hän ol/i osta/nut</b>	he/she had bought	<b><u>hän ei ol/lut osta/nut</u></b>
<b>ol/i/mme osta/neet</b>	we had bought	<b><u>emme ol/leet osta/neet</u></b>
<b>ol/i/tte osta/neet</b>	you (pl.) had bought	<b><u>ette ol/leet osta/neet</u></b>
<b>he ol/i/vat osta/neet</b>	they had bought	<b><u>he eivät ol/leet osta/neet</u></b>
<b>ol/i/n ol/lut</b>	I had been	<b><u>en ol/lut ol/lut</u></b>
<b>ol/i/mme ol/leet</b>	we had been	<b><u>emme ol/leet ol/leet</u></b>
<b>ol/i/t näyttä/nyt</b>	you (sing.) had shown	<b><u>et ol/lut näyttä/nyt</u></b>
<b>ol/i/mme osan/neet</b>	we had known how	<b><u>emme ol/leet osan/neet</u></b>
<b>ol/i/t saa/nut</b>	you (sing.) had got	<b><u>et ol/lut saa/nut</u></b>
<b>hän ol/i pelän/nyt</b>	he/she had feared	<b><u>hän ei ol/lut pelän/nyt</u></b>
<b>ol/i/mme tul/leet</b>	we had come	<b><u>emme ol/leet tul/leet</u></b>
<b>ol/i/n näh/nyt</b>	I had seen	<b><u>en ol/lut näh/nyt</u></b>

And note finally the following sentence examples.

<b><i>En osta maitoa.</i></b>	<i>I do/will not buy any milk.</i>
<b><i>En osta/nut maitoa.</i></b>	<i>I did not buy any milk.</i>
<b><i>En ole osta/nut maitoa.</i></b>	<i>I have not bought any milk.</i>
<b><i>En ol/lut osta/nut maitoa.</i></b>	<i>I had not bought any milk.</i>

## 15 MOODS

- *Indicative*
- *Conditional*
- *Imperative*
- *Potential*

### §64 INDICATIVE

The term ‘mood’ refers to certain verb endings expressing the manner in which the speaker presents the action of the verb. There are four moods in Finnish: the indicative (which is not marked by a separate ending) is the most common, and expresses the action of the verb ‘as such’. The conditional **-isi-** mostly indicates a hypothetical action; the imperative (several different endings according to person) indicates a command; and the potential **-ne-**, a rare mood, presents an action as probable or conceivable.

The indicative mood is thus the most common mood. It has no ending and presents an action as such, without any indication of the speaker’s attitude. Tense and personal endings are added in the normal way.

**Nyt mene/n kotiin.**

**Lapsi leikki/i pihalla.**

**Vieraat tule/vat illalla.**

**Eilen sa/i/n kaksi kirjettä.**

**Koska sairastu/i/t?**

**He o/vat asu/neet kymmenen vuotta Turussa.**

**Missä ole/t synty/nyt?**

**Vuonna 1960 Paasikivi oli jo kuollut.**

*Now I’m going home.*

*A/the child plays in the yard.*

*The guests are coming in the evening.*

*Yesterday I got two letters.*

*When did you fall ill?*

*They have lived in Turku for ten years.*

*Where were you born?*

*In the year 1960 Paasikivi had already died.*

These verb forms contain no mood ending, then, only personal and (where necessary) tense endings.

### §65 CONDITIONAL

The conditional **-isi-** mostly indicates an action that is presented as hypothetical, and occurs most commonly in conditional clauses after **jos** ‘if’ and in the accompanying main clause.

The conditional ending is **-isi-**, which is added to the inflectional stem (§23).

The conditional ending does not cause consonant gradation in the stem preceding it (§15.2), but many vowel change rules apply when **-isi-** follows the inflectional stem (§16). The conditional ending is followed by a personal ending, after which there may also be an enclitic particle.

The verbs **sano/a** ‘say’, **puhu/a** ‘speak’ and **anta/a** ‘give’ have the following conditional forms in the three singular persons.

<i>First p. sing.</i>	<b>(minä)</b>	<b>sano/isi/n</b> <b>puhu/isi/n</b> <b>anta/isi/n</b>	I would say I would speak I would give
<i>Second p. sing.</i>	<b>(sinä)</b>	<b>sano/isi/t</b> <b>puhu/isi/t</b> <b>anta/isi/t</b>	you would say you would speak you would give
<i>Third p. sing.</i>	<b>hän</b> <b>Kalle</b> <b>äiti</b>	<b>sano/isi</b> <b>puhu/isi</b> <b>anta/isi</b>	he/she would say Kalle would speak mother would give

Below are examples of the effect of vowel changes before the conditional ending. The table shows first the basic form of the verb, then the third person singular present indicative as an example of the inflectional stem, with the section number (§) explaining the change in the final vowel of the inflectional stem, and finally the first person singular of the conditional (the other persons only differ in the personal ending).

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing.</i> <i>present</i> <i>indicative</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>First p. sing.</i> <i>conditional</i>
<b>kerto/a</b>	tell	kerto/o	16(1)	kerto/isi/n
<b>asu/a</b>	live	asu/u	“	asu/isi/n
<b>pysy/ä</b>	stay	pysy/y	“	pysy/isi/n
<b>luke/a</b>	read	luke/e	16(5)	luk/isi/n
<b>tunte/a</b>	know, feel	tunte/e	“	tunt/isi/n
<b>oppi/a</b>	learn	oppi/i	16(6)	opp/isi/n
<b>salli/a</b>	allow	salli/i	“	sall/isi/n
<b>näyttä/ä</b>	show	näyttä/ä	16(7)	näyttä/isi/n
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	vetä/ä	“	vetä/isi/n
<b>jaka/a</b>	divide	jaka/a	16(8)	jaka/isi/n
<b>otta/a</b>	take	otta/a	“	otta/isi/n
<b>rakasta/a</b>	love	rakasta/a	“	rakasta/isi/n

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. present indicative</i>	<i>Cf. §</i>	<i>First p. sing. conditional</i>
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	huoma <u>a</u>	16(2)	huoma/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>hypät/ä</b>	jump	hypp <u>ä</u>	“	hyppä/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	pelk <u>ä</u>	“	pelkä/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>tavat/a</b>	meet	tap <u>a</u>	“	tapa/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>saa/da</b>	get	saa	16(2)	sa/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>tuoda</b>	bring	tu <u>o</u>	16(3)	to/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>vie/dä</b>	take	vi <u>e</u>	“	ve/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>syö/dä</b>	eat	sy <u>ö</u>	“	sö/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>voi/da</b>	be able	voi	16(4)	vo/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>pysäköi/dä</b>	park	pysäköi	“	pysäkö/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	nouse <u>e</u>	16(5)	nous/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>tul/la</b>	come	tule <u>e</u>	“	tul/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>men/nä</b>	go	mene <u>e</u>	“	men/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	ajattele <u>e</u>	“	ajattel/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>hymyil/lä</b>	smile	hymyile <u>e</u>	“	hymyil/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>tarvit/a</b>	need	tarvitse <u>e</u>	“	tarvits/ <u>isi</u> /n
<b>vanhet/a</b>	grow old	vanhene <u>e</u>	“	vanhen/ <u>isi</u> /n

Below are some examples of the use of the conditional.

***Ol/isi/n iloinen, jos tul/isi/t.***

*I would be pleased if you came.*

***Jo/isi/n mielelläni kahvia.***

*I would love some coffee ('I would drink with pleasure').*

***Jos vesi ol/isi lämmintä, sa/isi/t uida.***

*If the water were warm you could swim.*

***Väittä/isi/n, että...***

*I would claim that...*

***Muutta/isi/t/ko pois Suomesta?***

*Would you move away from Finland?*

***Tul/isi/vat/ko he jos pyytä/isi/mme?***

*Would they come if we asked (them)?*

***Kyllä Kantanen voitta/isi jos halua/isi.***

*Kantanen would certainly win if he wanted to.*

The conditional is often used to show politeness.

***Kaata/isi/t/ko lisää teetä?***

*Would you pour some more tea?*

***Kysy/isi/n, onko teillä...***

*May I ask whether you have...*

<b>Läht/isi/mme/kö jo kotiin?</b>	<i>Shall we go home now?</i>
<b>Ruoka ol/isi nyt valmista.</b>	The meal <i>is</i> ready now (in the sense 'dinner is served').

As was mentioned above (§61), the conditional also occurs in the perfect. These structures consist of the forms **ol/isi/n** ~ **ol/isi/t**, etc. followed by the past participle of the main verb.

**Ol/isi/n ol/lut iloinen, jos...**  
*I would have been pleased if...*

**Ol/isi/n mielelläni lähte/nyt Ruotsiin, jos ol/isi/n voi/nut.**  
*I would have gone to Sweden with pleasure if I had been able to.*

**Ol/isi/t/ko tul/lut meille?**  
*Would you have come to us?*

**Ol/isi/vat/ko he suostu/neet tähän?**  
*Would they have agreed to this?*

**Ol/isi/n sairastu/nut, ellei Martti ol/isi autta/nut minua.**  
*I would have fallen ill if Martti had not helped me.*

The negative forms of the conditional are constructed from the negation verb **en** ~ **et**, etc. and the main verb with the ending **-isi-** but without a personal ending.

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>
<b>ol/isi/n</b>	I would be	<b>en ol/isi</b> I would not be
<b>tul/isi/t</b>	you would come	<b>et tul/isi</b>
<b>he anta/isi/vat</b>	they would give	<b>he eivät anta/isi</b>
<b>kerto/isi/mme</b>	we would tell	<b>emme kerto/isi</b>
<b>halua/isi/n</b>	I would like	<b>en halua/isi</b>
<b>sata/isi</b>	it would rain	<b>ei sata/isi</b>
<b>sö/isi/n</b>	I would eat	<b>en sö/isi</b>
<b>luk/isi/mme</b>	we would read	<b>emme luk/isi</b>
<b>he vetä/isi/vät</b>	they would pull	<b>he eivät vetä/isi</b>
<b>ol/isi/n otta/nut</b>	I would have taken	<b>en ol/isi otta/nut</b>
<b>ol/isi/tte syö/neet</b>	you would have eaten	<b>ette ol/isi syö/neet</b>
<b>he ol/isi/vat lähte/neet</b>	they would have left	<b>he eivät ol/isi lähte/neet</b>

## §66 IMPERATIVE

The imperative is primarily used for commands, requests and exhortations, and in the third person also wishes. There is no imperative form for the first person singular.



	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>First p.</i>	–	<b>-kaamme ~ -käämme</b>
<i>Second p.</i>	(no ending)	<b>-kaa ~ -kää</b>
<i>Third p.</i>	<b>-koon ~ -köön</b>	<b>-koot ~ -kööt</b>

The second person singular and plural forms, e.g. **sano** and **sano/kaa**, are the most common. The third person forms occur mostly in the literary language.

The second person singular of the imperative has the same form as the first person singular of the present indicative, without the final **-n**.

This form is also identical with that of the main verb in the present indicative negative (§63), cf. **sano/n** ‘I say’, **tule/n** ‘I come’, **pelkää/n** ‘I fear’—**en sano** ‘I do not say’, **en tule** ‘I do not come’, **en pelkää** ‘I do not fear’—**sano** ‘say!’, **tule** ‘come!’, **pelkää** ‘fear!’.

The other imperative forms are based on the infinitive stem (§22).

The imperative forms of the verbs **sano/a** ‘say’, **men/nä** ‘go’ and **kerto/a** ‘tell’ are thus as follows.

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>First p.</i>	–	<b>sano/kaamme</b> let us say <b>men/käämme</b> let us go <b>kerto/kaamme</b> let us tell
<i>Second p.</i>	<b>sano</b> say! <b>mene</b> go! <b>kerro</b> tell!	<b>sano/kaa</b> say! <b>men/kää</b> go! <b>kerto/kaa</b> tell!
<i>Third p.</i>	<b>sano/koon</b> may he say <b>men/köön</b> may he go <b>kerto/koon</b> may he tell	<b>sano/koot</b> may they say <b>men/kööt</b> may they go <b>kerto/koot</b> may they tell

The table below shows the infinitive, the first person singular present, and the second person singular and plural of the imperative.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First p. sing. present</i>	<i>Second p. sing. imperative</i>	<i>Second p. pl. imperative</i>
<b>anta/a</b>	give	anna/n	anna	anta/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>osta/a</b>	buy	osta/n	osta	osta/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>unohta/a</b>	forget	unohda/n	unohda	unohta/ <b>kaa</b>

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>First p. sing. present</i>	<i>Second p. sing. imperative</i>	<i>Second p. pl. imperative</i>
<b>luke/a</b>	read	lue/n	lue	luke/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	vedä/n	vedä	vetä/ <b>kää</b>
<b>sulke/a</b>	close	sulje/n	sulje	sulke/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>herättä/ä</b>	wake	herätä/n	herätä	herättä/ <b>kää</b>
<b>avat/a</b>	open	avaa/n	avaa	avat/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>maat/a</b>	lie	makaa/n	makaa	maat/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>tavat/a</b>	meet	tapaa/n	tapaa	tavat/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>määrät/ä</b>	order	määrää/n	määrää	määrät/ <b>kää</b>
<b>hakat/a</b>	hew	hakkaa/n	hakkaa	hakat/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>tarjot/a</b>	offer	tarjoa/n	tarjoa	tarjot/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	myy/n	myy	myy/ <b>kää</b>
<b>syö/dä</b>	eat	syö/n	syö	syö/ <b>kää</b>
<b>ui/da</b>	swim	ui/n	ui	ui/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>teh/dä</b>	do	tee/n	tee	teh/ <b>kää</b>
<b>pysäköi/dä</b>	park	pysäköi/n	pysäköi	pysäköi/ <b>kää</b>
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	nouse/n	nouse	nous/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>tul/la</b>	come	tule/n	tule	tul/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>men/nä</b>	go	mene/n	mene	men/ <b>kää</b>
<b>juos/ta</b>	run	juokse/n	juokse	juos/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	ajattele/n	ajattele	ajatel/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>harkit/a</b>	consider	harkitse/n	harkitse	harkit/ <b>kaa</b>
<b>paet/a</b>	flee	pakene/n	pakene	paet/ <b>kaa</b>

The object of an imperative verb is in the partitive if any of the normal partitive rules apply (§33.2). The accusative object of an imperative takes no ending if the imperative is first or second person, but the ending **-n** if the imperative is third person, cf. §38.

The examples below illustrate the use of the imperative.

<b><i>Mene kotiin!</i></b>	<i>Go home! (sing.)</i>
<b><i>Men/kää kotiin!</i></b>	<i>Go home! (pl.)</i>
<b><i>Tule tänne!</i></b>	<i>Come here! (sing.)</i>
<b><i>Tul/kaa tänne!</i></b>	<i>Come here! (pl.)</i>
<b><i>Osta minulle kuppi kahvia!</i></b>	<i>Buy me a cup of coffee!</i>
<b><i>Anta/kaa meille vettä.</i></b>	<i>Give us some water!</i>
<b><i>Anna minulle lusikka!</i></b>	<i>Give me a spoon!</i>
<b><i>Ol/kaa hyvä!</i></b>	<i>Please. (lit. 'Be good!') (pl.)</i>
<b><i>Ole hyvä!</i></b>	<i>Please. ('Be good!') (sing.)</i>
<b><i>Ole hyvä ja avaa ovi!</i></b>	<i>Please open the door. (Be good and open...')</i>
<b><i>Teh/käämme kuten hän sanoo.</i></b>	<i>Let us do as he says.</i>
<b><i>Varat/kaa meillekin pöytä!</i></b>	<i>Reserve a table for us, too!</i>

<i>Elä/köön Suomi!</i>	<i>Long live Finland! ('May Finland live.')</i>
<i>Onneksi ol/koon!</i>	<i>Congratulations! ('May it be to (your) happiness.')</i>
<i>Puhu/kaamme suomea.</i>	<i>Let us speak Finnish.</i>
<i>Juo/kaamme Lipposen malja!</i>	<i>Let us drink a toast to Lipponen!</i>
<i>Tul/koot he tänne.</i>	<i>Let them come here.</i>
<i>Men/kööt he sinne, me jäämme kotiin.</i>	<i>Let them go there, we are staying at home.</i>
<i>Ajattele asiaa!</i>	<i>Think about the matter!</i>
<i>Nous/kaa ylös!</i>	<i>Get up!</i>
<i>Kukin teh/köön kuten haluaa.</i>	<i>Let everyone do as he/she likes.</i>
<i>Luke/kaa läksynne kunnolla!</i>	<i>Do ('read') your homework properly! (pl.)</i>
<i>Lue läksysi kunnolla!</i>	<i>Do your homework properly! (sing.)</i>

In the spoken language the passive is always used instead of the first person plural imperative form, e.g. **sanotaan** 'one says' but often also 'let's say', **mennään** 'let's go', **tehdään** 'let's do' for **sanokaamme**, **menkäämme**, **tehkäämme**.

The negative forms of the imperative are constructed differently; here too the second person singular is unlike the other forms.

The second person singular imperative negative is formed from the word **älä**, placed before the imperative affirmative form.

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<b>osta</b>	buy!	<b>älä</b>	osta don't buy!
<b>lue</b>	read!	<b>älä</b>	lue
<b>vedä</b>	pull!	<b>älä</b>	vedä
<b>avaa</b>	open!	<b>älä</b>	avaa
<b>makaa</b>	lie!	<b>älä</b>	makaa
<b>syö</b>	eat!	<b>älä</b>	syö
<b>tule</b>	come!	<b>älä</b>	tule

The other imperative negative forms are based on the stem **äl-** with the appropriate imperative ending, followed by the infinitive stem of the main verb with the ending **-ko ~ -kö**.

The negation words are thus **älkөөn** (third person singular), **älkäämme** (first person plural), **älkää** (second person plural) and **älkөөt** (third person plural).

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Imperative negative 2 pl.</i>
<b>sano/a</b>	say	<b><u>älkää</u></b> sano/ <b><u>ko</u></b> don't say!
<b>otta/a</b>	take	<b><u>älkää</u></b> otta/ <b><u>ko</u></b>
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	<b><u>älkää</u></b> pelät/ <b><u>kö</u></b>
<b>määrät/ä</b>	order	<b><u>älkää</u></b> määrät/ <b><u>kö</u></b>
<b>maat/a</b>	lie	<b><u>älkää</u></b> maat/ <b><u>ko</u></b>
<b>tuo/da</b>	bring	<b><u>älkää</u></b> tuo/ <b><u>ko</u></b>
<b>tul/la</b>	come	<b><u>älkää</u></b> tul/ <b><u>ko</u></b>
<b>men/nä</b>	go	<b><u>älkää</u></b> men/ <b><u>kö</u></b>
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	<b><u>älkää</u></b> ajatel/ <b><u>ko</u></b>

Examples of the imperative negative follow below. The object is in the partitive, in accordance with the normal rules (§33.2).

<b>Älä pelkää koiraa!</b>	<i>Don't be afraid of the dog! (sing.)</i>
<b>Älkää syö/kö niin nopeasti!</b>	<i>Don't eat so quickly! (pl.)</i>
<b>Älä polta täällä!</b>	<i>Don't smoke here! (sing.)</i>
<b>Älkää poltta/ko täällä!</b>	<i>Don't smoke here! (pl.)</i>
<b>Älkää lähte/kö kotiin vielä!</b>	<i>Don't go home yet! (pl.)</i>
<b>Älä lyö minua!</b>	<i>Don't hit me! (sing.)</i>
<b>Älkää lyö/kö minua!</b>	<i>Don't hit me! (pl.)</i>
<b>Älkäämme ajatel/ko sitä enää.</b>	<i>Let us not think about it any longer. (pl.)</i>
<b>Älä tanssi Uolevin kanssa!</b>	<i>Don't dance with Uolevi! (sing.)</i>
<b>Älköön kukaan usko/ko, että...</b>	<i>Let no one believe that... (sing.)</i>
<b>Älkää avat/ko tuota ikkunaa!</b>	<i>Don't open that window! (pl.)</i>
<b>Älä sylje lattialle!</b>	<i>Don't spit on the floor! (sing.)</i>

## §67 POTENTIAL

The potential, which has the ending **-ne-**, is a rare mood and thus of less importance. It indicates that the action of the verb is probable, possible or conceivable.<sup>1</sup>

The basic ending of the potential is **-ne-**, which is added to the infinitive stem (§22).

The potential is thus formed in the same way as the past participle, which has the ending **-nut ~ -nyt** (§61). The sound alternations are also the same.

<sup>1</sup> *Translator's note:* the potential is normally glossed 'may' in isolation (e.g. in the Appendix below); but in context the degree of probability implied is often more accurately rendered by 'probably'.

If the infinitive stem ends in a consonant

- (a) which is **l, r, s**, the **n** of the **-ne-** ending changes to a second **r, s**;  
 (b) which is **t**, this **t** changes to **n**.

After the ending **-ne-** the personal ending follows.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing. potential</i>	<i>Cf. third p. sing. present indic.</i>
<b>anta/a</b>	give	anta/ <b>ne</b> /e	anta/a
<b>löytä/ä</b>	find	löytä/ <b>ne</b> /e	löytä/ä
<b>luke/a</b>	read	luke/ <b>ne</b> /e	luke/e
<b>saa/da</b>	get	saa/ <b>ne</b> /e	saa
<b>voi/da</b>	be able	voi/ <b>ne</b> /e	voi
<b>vartioi/da</b>	guard	vartioi/ <b>ne</b> /e	vartioi
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	nous/ <b>se</b> /e	nouse/e
<b>tu/la</b>	come	tu/ <b>le</b> /e	tule/e
<b>ajatel/la</b>	think	ajatel/ <b>le</b> /e	ajattele/e
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	huoma <b>n</b> / <b>ne</b> /e	huomaa
<b>kohdat/a</b>	meet	kohda <b>n</b> / <b>ne</b> /e	kohtaa
<b>leikat/a</b>	cut	leika <b>n</b> / <b>ne</b> /e	leikkaa
<b>tarvit/a</b>	need	tarvi <b>n</b> / <b>ne</b> /e	tarvitse/e
<b>valit/a</b>	choose	vali <b>n</b> / <b>ne</b> /e	valitse/e
<b>häirit/ä</b>	disturb	häiri <b>n</b> / <b>ne</b> /e	häiritse/e

The potential forms of the verb **ol/la** 'be' are exceptional. They are based on the stem **liene-**, which is followed by the personal endings: **liene/n**, **liene/t**, **liene/e**, **liene/mme**, **liene/tte**, **liene/vät**.

The following examples illustrate the use of the potential.

**Presidentti Havel saapu/ne/e huomenna.**

President Havel *will probably arrive* tomorrow.

**Eduskunta valin/ne/e Riitta Uosukaisen puhemieheksi.**

Parliament *will probably elect* Riitta Uosukainen Speaker.

**Ahtisaari liene/e ulkomailla.**

Ahtisaari *may be/is probably* abroad.

**Utsjoki sijain/ne/e pohjoisessa.**

Utsjoki *is probably* ('situated') in the north.

**He liene/vät samaa mieltä kanssamme.**

*They are probably of the same opinion as we are.*

**Hyväksy/ne/tte päätöksemme.**

*You will probably accept our decision.*

The potential also occurs in the perfect, when the structure is **liene-** plus the past participle of the main verb (§61).

**Ahtisaari liene/e käy/nyt Brasiliassa.**

*Ahtisaari has probably been to Brazil.*

**Hän liene/e ol/lut myös Marokossa.**

*He has probably also been to Morocco.*

**Liene/mme näh/neet tämän elokuvan aikaisemmin.**

*We may have seen/have probably seen this film before.*

The negative forms of the potential are constructed in the normal way. In the present the negation verb **en, et,** etc. is followed by the potential form without a personal ending, e.g. **en osta/ne** 'I shall probably not buy'. The negative of the potential perfect follows the same pattern: negation verb+**liene** (without personal ending)+past participle, e.g. **en liene osta/nut** 'I have probably not bought'.

**Virtanen ei syö/ne tällaista ruokaa.**

*Virtanen probably does not eat this kind of food.*

**Emme uskalta/ne tehdä näin.**

*We probably do not dare to do (it like) this.*

**Utsjoki ei sijain/ne Pohjanmaalla.**

*Utsjoki is probably not in Ostrobothnia.*

**He eivät liene soitta/neet vielä.**

*They probably have not rung yet.*

## 16 THE PASSIVE

- *General*
- *Passive present*
- *Passive past*
- *Passive perfect and pluperfect*
- *Passive moods*

### §68 GENERAL

The Finnish passive is a very common and important verb form. It indicates that the action of the verb is performed by an unspecified person, i.e. that the agent is impersonal (indefinite). It thus roughly corresponds to Swedish and German 'man', French 'on' and English 'one'. The passive has two endings: the passive marker itself, which is **-tta-** ~ **-ttä-** or **-ta-** ~ **-tä-**, and a special personal ending **-Vn**, e.g. **sano/ta/an** 'one says, it is said'.

Passive sentences should be distinguished from generic sentences expressing a general truth or law or state of affairs. The predicate verb of generic sentences appears in the third person singular active and there is no separate subject:

<b>Usein kuule/e, että...</b>	<i>One often hears that...</i>
<b>Siellä saa hyvää kahvia.</b>	<i>One gets good coffee there.</i>
<b>Tästä näke/e hyvin.</b>	<i>You/one can see well from here.</i>
<b>Jos juokse/e joka aamu, tule/e terveeksi.</b>	<i>If you run every morning you will become healthy.</i>

The passive occurs in all tenses (present, past, perfect and pluperfect) and also all moods (indicative, conditional, imperative and potential). The basic pattern of the passive forms is illustrated in the table below.

<i>Root</i>	<i>Passive</i>	<i>Tense, mood</i>	<i>Person</i>	<i>Particle</i>		
<b>sano</b>	<b>ta</b>		<b>an</b>		one says	<i>(pass. pres.)</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>tt</b>	<b>i</b>	<b>in</b>		one said	<i>(pass. past)</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>tta</b>	<b>isi</b>	<b>in</b>		one would say	<i>(pass. cond.)</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>tta</b>	<b>ne</b>	<b>en</b>		one may say	<i>(pass. pot.)</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>tta</b>	<b>ko</b>	<b>on</b>		let one say	<i>(pass. imp.)</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>ta</b>		<b>an</b>	<b>han</b>	one does say	<i>(pass. pres.)</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>tt</b>	<b>i</b>	<b>in</b>	<b>ko</b>	did one say?	<i>(pass. past)</i>

In this chapter, however, the formation of the passive will not be described as the addition of these endings: we do not need to say for instance that the passive present is formed by adding the endings **-ta-** and **-Vn: sano/ta/an** 'one says'. Instead, we shall make use of a number of 'short cuts' which are available because the passive happens to resemble several forms we have already discussed, in particular the infinitive. In this way many of the complex sound alternations in the passive can be derived automatically.

## §69 PASSIVE PRESENT

With the exception of **anta/a** verbs, the passive present can be formed according to the following simple rule:

The passive present is formed by adding the ending **-an ~ -än** to the first infinitive (does not apply to **anta/a** verbs).

This rule thus covers **huomat/a**, **saa/da**, **nous/ta**, **tul/la** and **lämmet/ä** verbs. The oblique lines in the examples below indicate the positions of the passive endings proper.

<i>First infinitive</i>	<i>Passive present</i>	
<b>huomat/a</b>	<b>huomat/a/an</b>	one notices
<b>osat/a</b>	<b>osat/a/an</b>	one knows how
<b>hypät/ä</b>	<b>hypät/ä/än</b>	one jumps
<b>määrät/ä</b>	<b>määrät/ä/än</b>	one orders
<b>pelät/ä</b>	<b>pelät/ä/än</b>	one fears
<b>saa/da</b>	<b>saa/da/an</b>	one gets
<b>myy/dä</b>	<b>myy/dä/än</b>	one sells
<b>voi/da</b>	<b>voi/da/an</b>	one can
<b>teh/dä</b>	<b>teh/dä/än</b>	one does
<b>nous/ta</b>	<b>nous/ta/an</b>	one rises
<b>men/nä</b>	<b>men/nä/än</b>	one goes
<b>tul/la</b>	<b>tul/la/an</b>	one comes
<b>ajatel/la</b>	<b>ajatel/la/an</b>	one thinks
<b>julkais/ta</b>	<b>julkais/ta/an</b>	one publishes
<b>tarvit/a</b>	<b>tarvit/a/an</b>	one needs
<b>valit/a</b>	<b>valit/a/an</b>	one chooses
<b>paet/a</b>	<b>paet/a/an</b>	one flees

The passive present of **anta/a** verbs is formed by adding the passive endings **-ta/an ~ -tä/än** to the first person singular stem of the active, e.g. **sano/n** :



**sano/ta/an** ‘one says’; immediately before the passive endings the usual consonant gradation rules apply (cf. §15.2, rule B(a)). If the final vowel of the stem is **-a** or **-ä**, this changes to **-e** in the passive.

The passive present of **anta/a** verbs is formed

- (a) by adding **-ta/an** ~ **-tä/än** to the first person singular stem and  
 (b) changing the final **-a** or **-ä** of the stem to **-e**.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>First person present</i>	<i>Passive present</i>	
<b>sano/a</b>	<b>sano/n</b>	<b>sano/ta/an</b>	one says
<b>osta/a</b>	<b>osta/n</b>	<b>oste/ta/an</b>	one buys
<b>etsi/ä</b>	<b>etsi/n</b>	<b>etsi/tä/än</b>	one looks for
<b>kysy/ä</b>	<b>kysy/n</b>	<b>kysy/tä/än</b>	one asks
<b>nukku/a</b>	<b>nuku/n</b>	<b>nuku/ta/an</b>	one sleeps
<b>anta/a</b>	<b>anna/n</b>	<b>anne/ta/an</b>	one gives
<b>sulke/a</b>	<b>sulje/n</b>	<b>sulje/ta/an</b>	one closes
<b>lentä/ä</b>	<b>lennä/n</b>	<b>lenne/tä/än</b>	one flies
<b>unohta/a</b>	<b>unohda/n</b>	<b>unohde/ta/an</b>	one forgets
<b>otta/a</b>	<b>ota/n</b>	<b>ote/ta/an</b>	one takes
<b>luke/a</b>	<b>lue/n</b>	<b>lue/ta/an</b>	one reads
<b>pyytä/ä</b>	<b>pyydä/n</b>	<b>pyyde/tä/än</b>	one requests

The negative forms of the passive present consist of the negation verb **ei** followed by the passive form without the personal ending **-an** ~ **-än**.

<i>Affirmative</i>	<i>Negative</i>	
<b>huomat/a/an</b>	<b>ei huomat/a</b>	one does not notice
<b>osat/a/an</b>	<b>ei osat/a</b>	one does not know how
<b>saa/da/an</b>	<b>ei saa/da</b>	one does not get
<b>teh/dä/än</b>	<b>ei teh/dä</b>	one does not do
<b>men/nä/än</b>	<b>ei men/nä</b>	one does not go
<b>nous/ta/an</b>	<b>ei nous/ta</b>	one does not get up
<b>tarvit/a/an</b>	<b>ei tarvit/a</b>	one does not need
<b>sano/ta/an</b>	<b>ei sano/ta</b>	one does not say
<b>anne/ta/an</b>	<b>ei anne/ta</b>	one does not give
<b>pyyde/tä/än</b>	<b>ei pyyde/tä</b>	one does not request
<b>ote/ta/an</b>	<b>ei ote/ta</b>	one does not take

The sentences below illustrate the use of the passive present.

**Suomessa juo/da/an sekä maitoa että olutta.**

In Finland *people drink* both milk and beer.

**Ravintolassa tanssi/ta/an kello yhteentoista.**

In the restaurant there is dancing (*'one dances'*) until 11 o'clock.

**Tanskassa puhu/ta/an tanskaa.**

In Denmark *they speak* Danish.

**Ei/kö täällä puhu/ta ruotsia?**

*Isn't Swedish spoken* here?

**Nyt näh/dä/än, että...**

Now *one sees* that...

**Mitä täällä teh/dä/än?**

What *is being done* here?

**Täällä ei tarjot/a olutta.**

Beer *is not served* here.

**Pelät/ä/än, että Suomi häviää.**

*It is feared* that Finland will lose.

**Väite/tä/än, että hän on sairas.**

*It is claimed/they claim* that he/she is ill.

The singular accusative object of a passive verb has no ending (§38).

**Huomiseksi lue/ta/an seuraava kappale.**

*The next chapter* will be read for tomorrow.

**Kirja pan/na/an pöydälle.**

*The book* is put on the table.

**Ovi sulje/ta/an avaimella.**

*The door* is closed with a key.

**Auto voi/da/an ajaa pihalle.**

*The car* can be driven into the yard.

In the spoken language it is very common for the passive forms to be used in place of the first person plural indicative and imperative.

*Written language*

**(me) juo/mme**

we drink

**(me) kerro/mme**

we tell

**(me) halua/mme**

we want

**(me) ajattele/mme**

we think

**juo/kaamme!**

let us drink!

**kerto/kaamme!**

let us tell!

**ajatel/kaamme!**

let us think!

**lähte/käämme!**

let us leave!

*Spoken language (often)*

**(me) juo/daan**

**(me) kerro/taan**

**(me) halut/aan**

**(me) ajatel/laan**

**juo/daan!**

**kerro/taan!**

**ajatel/laan!**

**lähde/tään!**

## §70 PASSIVE PAST

The past tense of the passive is formed from one of the endings **-tta-** ~ **-ttä-** or **-ta-** ~ **-tä-**, with the final vowel then being dropped before the past tense **-i-** (§16). After the passive ending come the past tense **-i-** and the personal

ending **-Vn**. To make the description simpler these combinations of endings will henceforth be given as **-ttiin** and **-tiin**. The passive past can be derived from the passive present by the following rule:

The passive past is formed by using

- (a) **-ttiin** in place of the passive present **-taan ~ -tään** when occurring after a vowel;
- (b) **-tiin** in place of all other instances of passive present endings.

Examples:

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>First p. sing.</i>	<i>Passive present</i>	<i>Passive past</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
sano/a	sano/n	sano/taan	sano/ <u>ttiin</u>	one said
osta/a	osta/n	oste/taan	oste/ <u>ttiin</u>	one bought
vaati/a	vaadi/n	vaadi/taan	vaadi/ <u>ttiin</u>	one demanded
anta/a	anna/n	anne/taan	anne/ <u>ttiin</u>	one gave
pyytä/ä	pyydä/n	pyyde/tään	pyyde/ <u>ttiin</u>	one requested
rakasta/a	rakasta/n	rakaste/taan	rakaste/ <u>ttiin</u>	one loved
huomat/a	huomaa/n	huomat/aan	huomat/ <u>tiin</u>	one noticed
osat/a	osaa/n	osat/aan	osat/ <u>tiin</u>	one knew how
palat/a	palaa/n	palat/aan	palat/ <u>tiin</u>	one returned
pelät/ä	pelkää/n	pelät/ään	pelät/ <u>tiin</u>	one feared
saa/da	saa/n	saa/daan	saa/ <u>tiin</u>	one got
vie/dä	vie/n	vie/dään	vie/ <u>tiin</u>	one took
syö/dä	syö/n	syö/dään	syö/ <u>tiin</u>	one ate
tuo/da	tuo/n	tuo/daan	tuo/ <u>tiin</u>	one brought
nous/ta	nouse/n	nous/taan	nous/ <u>tiin</u>	one rose
tul/la	tule/n	tul/laan	tul/ <u>tiin</u>	one came
men/nä	mene/n	men/nään	men/ <u>tiin</u>	one went
ajatetel/la	ajattele/n	ajatel/laan	ajatel/ <u>tiin</u>	one thought
ol/la	ole/n	ol/laan	ol/ <u>tiin</u>	one was
tarvit/a	tarvitse/n	tarvit/aan	tarvit/ <u>tiin</u>	one needed
paet/a	pakene/n	paet/aan	paet/ <u>tiin</u>	one fled
ansait/a	ansaitse/n	ansait/aan	ansait/ <u>tiin</u>	one earned
harkit/a	harkitse/n	harkit/aan	harkit/ <u>tiin</u>	one considered

The negative forms of the passive past have the following structure: **ei**+past participle passive (§71). The examples below illustrate the use of the passive past in the affirmative.

**Viime vuonna Suomeen *tuotiin* enemmän kuin Suomesta *vietiin*.**  
Last year more *was imported* to Finland than *was exported* from  
Finland.

***Oltiin* sitä mieltä, että...**  
*One was* of the opinion that...

**Pian *havaittiin*, että Eero oli lähtenyt.**  
*One/we* soon *noticed* that Eero had left. (*Or: It was* soon *noticed*...)

**Meille *anneettiin* monta hyvää neuvoa.**  
*We were* *given* much good advice.

***Tultiin* Helsinkiin aamulla.**  
*We came* to Helsinki in the morning.

**Maahan *valittiin* uusi presidentti.**  
The country *elected* a new president.  
(‘A new president *was elected* to the country.’)

**Tukholmasta *lennettiin* Osloon.**  
From Stockholm *we flew* to Oslo.

***Nukuettiin* eri huoneissa.**  
*One/we* *slept* in different rooms.

It will be evident from these examples that the passive often has the meaning ‘we’, especially in the spoken language.

## §71 PASSIVE PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT

The passive perfect and pluperfect have the structure **on** (perfect) or **oli** (pluperfect)+past participle passive (for the past participle active see §61). The past participle passive can be formed most conveniently from the past tense by the following rule:

The past participle passive is formed by changing the passive past -  
**iin** to **-u** or **-y**.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>First p. sing.</i>	<i>Passive past</i>	<i>Passive past participle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>osta/a</b>	<b>osta/n</b>	<b>oste/ttiin</b>	<b>oste/ttu</b>	bought
<b>anta/a</b>	<b>anna/n</b>	<b>anne/ttiin</b>	<b>anne/ttu</b>	given
<b>nukku/a</b>	<b>nuku/n</b>	<b>nuku/ttiin</b>	<b>nuku/ttu</b>	slept
<b>pyytä/ä</b>	<b>pyydä/n</b>	<b>pyyde/ttiin</b>	<b>pyyde/tty</b>	requested
<b>huomat/a</b>	<b>huomaa/n</b>	<b>huomat/tiin</b>	<b>huomat/tu</b>	noticed

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>First p. sing.</i>	<i>Passive past</i>	<i>Passive past participle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
määrät/ä	määrää/n	määrät/tiin	määrät/ty	ordered
pelät/ä	pelkää/n	pelät/tiin	pelät/ty	feared
saa/da	saa/n	saa/tiin	saa/tu	got
syö/dä	syö/n	syö/tiin	syö/ty	eaten
myy/dä	myy/n	myy/tiin	myy/ty	sold
nous/ta	nouse/n	nous/tiin	nous/tu	risen
ol/la	ole/n	ol/tiin	ol/tu	been
men/nä	mene/n	men/tiin	men/ty	gone
tarvit/a	tarvitse/n	tarvit/tiin	tarvit/tu	needed

The use of these forms is illustrated below.

***On sano/ttu, että Suomi on tuhansien järvien maa.***

*It has been said that Finland is the land of a thousand lakes.*

***Oli sano/ttu, että...***

*It had been said that...*

***On väite/tty, ettei hän eroa koskaan.***

*It has been stated that he will never resign.*

***Tähän on tul/tu.***

*One has come to this.*

***Oli anne/ttu sellainen neuvo, että...***

*There had been given such advice that...*

***Kouluissa on lue/ttu saksaa jo pitkään.***

*German has long been studied in the schools.*

***Oli huomatu, että laiva uppoaa.***

*It had been noticed that the ship was sinking.*

***Oli jo syö/ty, kun vieraat tulivat.***

*One/we had already eaten when the guests came.*

***On esite/tty kolme ehdotusta.***

*Three suggestions have been put forward.*

***Tätä on pelät/ty monta vuotta.***

*This has been feared for many years.*

***On ol/tu myös sitä mieltä, että...***

*People have also been of the opinion that...*

***On/ko nyt men/ty liian pitkälle?***

*Has one/have we now gone too far?*

**Auto ol/i oste/ttu jo eilen.**

The car *had* already been *bought* yesterday.

**Autot ol/i oste/ttu...**

The cars *had been bought*...

The form of the passive perfect negative is **ei ole**+the past participle passive of the main verb; the corresponding pluperfect is **ei ol/lut**+the same participle (cf. §63).

<i>Affirmative</i>	<i>Negative</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>on saa/tu</b>	<b><u>ei ole saa/tu</u></b>	one has not got
<b>ol/i saa/tu</b>	<b><u>ei ol/lut saa/tu</u></b>	one had not got
<b>on sano/ttu</b>	<b><u>ei ole sano/ttu</u></b>	one has not said
<b>ol/i sano/ttu</b>	<b><u>ei ol/lut sano/ttu</u></b>	one had not said
<b>on määrät/ty</b>	<b><u>ei ole määrät/ty</u></b>	one has not ordered
<b>ol/i määrät/ty</b>	<b><u>ei ol/lut määrät/ty</u></b>	one had not ordered
<b>on ol/tu</b>	<b><u>ei ole ol/tu</u></b>	one has not been
<b>ol/i ol/tu</b>	<b><u>ei ol/lut ol/tu</u></b>	one had not been

Special attention should be given to the past tense passive negative, which consists of the negation verb **ei** followed by the past participle passive (cf. §70).

<i>Affirmative</i>	<i>Negative</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>sano/ttiin</b>	<b><u>ei sano/ttu</u></b>	one did not say
<b>oste/ttiin</b>	<b><u>ei oste/ttu</u></b>	one did not buy
<b>kysy/ttiin</b>	<b><u>ei kysy/tty</u></b>	one did not ask
<b>huomat/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei huomatu</u></b>	one did not notice
<b>osat/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei osatu</u></b>	one did not know how
<b>pelät/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei pelät/ty</u></b>	one did not fear
<b>saa/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei saa/tu</u></b>	one did not get
<b>syö/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei syö/ty</u></b>	one did not eat
<b>tul/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei tul/tu</u></b>	one did not come
<b>ol/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei ol/tu</u></b>	one was not
<b>men/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei men/ty</u></b>	one did not go
<b>tarvit/tiin</b>	<b><u>ei tarvit/tu</u></b>	one did not need

The use of the passive negative is further illustrated below.

**Tätä ei ole tarvit/tu ennenkään.**

This *has not been needed* before, either.

**Ei/kö ole oste/ttu ruokaa?**

*Has no food been bought?*

**Keneltäkään ei ky sy/tyy neuvoa.**

No one *was asked* for advice.

**50 vuotta sitten Suomen kouluissa ei paljon opiskel/tu englantia.**

50 years ago English *was not much studied* in Finnish schools.

**Virtasta ei valit/tu puheenjohtajaksi.**

Virtanen *was not elected* chairman.

**Häntä ei ollut näh/ty kaupungilla.**

He/she *had not been seen* in town.

**Lakon aikana ei saa/tu sähköä.**

During the strike *we didn't get* any electricity.

**Läksyä ei osat/tu hyvin.**

The homework *was not known* well.

**Paitaanne ei vielä ole pes/ty.**

Your shirt *has not yet been washed*.

**Seurauksia ei ollut otettu huomioon.**

The consequences *had not been taken* into consideration.

**Ehdotusta ei ymmärre/tty.**

The proposal *was not understood*.

**Sotaa ei koskaan unohde/ttu.**

The war *was never forgotten*.

## §72 PASSIVE MOODS

There is no mood ending for the indicative: for these forms see §69, e.g. **sano/ta/an** 'one says', **kerro/ta/an** 'one tells', **tul/la/an** 'one comes'. The other moods, i.e. the conditional (the ending of which is **-isi-**), the imperative (**-ko-** ~ **-kö-**) and the potential (**-ne-**), are all formed from the passive past tense (cf. §70) as can be seen below.

Change the passive past tense **-iin** to **-a** or **-ä** and add the required mood ending and the personal ending **-Vn**.

From the passive past **sano/tt/i/in** 'one said' we can thus derive the conditional **sano/tta/isi/in** 'one would say', the imperative **sano/tta/ko/on** 'let one say' and the potential **sano/tta/ne/en** 'one may say'. The vowel **V** is a copy of the final vowel of the mood ending.

<i>Infinitive Passive</i>	<i>Passive past</i>	<i>Passive conditional</i>	<i>Passive potential</i>	<i>Passive imperative</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>katso/a</b>	<b>katso/ttiin</b>	<b>katso/ttaisiin</b>	<b>katso/ttaneen</b>	<b>katso/ttakoon</b>	look
<b>tunte/a</b>	<b>tunne/ttiin</b>	<b>tunne/ttaisiin</b>	<b>tunne/ttaneen</b>	<b>tunne/ttakoon</b>	feel
<b>odotta/a</b>	<b>odote/ttiin</b>	<b>odote/ttaisiin</b>	<b>odote/ttaneen</b>	<b>odote/ttakoon</b>	wait
<b>avat/a</b>	<b>avat/tiin</b>	<b>avat/taisiin</b>	<b>avat/taneen</b>	<b>avat/takoon</b>	open
<b>lisät/ä</b>	<b>lisät/tiin</b>	<b>lisät/taisiin</b>	<b>lisät/taneen</b>	<b>lisät/täköön</b>	add
<b>juo/da</b>	<b>juo/tiin</b>	<b>juo/täisiin</b>	<b>juo/taneen</b>	<b>juo/takoon</b>	drink
<b>saa/da</b>	<b>saa/tiin</b>	<b>saa/taisiin</b>	<b>saa/taneen</b>	<b>saa/takoon</b>	get
<b>ol/la</b>	<b>ol/tiin</b>	<b>ol/taisiin</b>	<b>ol/taneen</b>	<b>ol/takoon</b>	be
<b>men/nä</b>	<b>men/tiin</b>	<b>men/täisiin</b>	<b>men/taneen</b>	<b>men/täköön</b>	go
<b>hävit/ä</b>	<b>hävit/tiin</b>	<b>hävit/täisiin</b>	<b>hävit/taneen</b>	<b>hävit/täköön</b>	disappear

The corresponding negative forms are as follows: in the conditional and potential the negation verb **ei** is followed by the appropriate passive form without the personal ending **-Vn**; in the imperative, **älkөөn** is followed by the passive form without the personal ending (cf. §66).

<i>Affirmative</i>	<i>Negative</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>juo/ta/isi/in</b>	<b>ei juo/ta/isi</b>	one would not drink
<b>ol/ta/isi/in</b>	<b>ei ol/ta/isi</b>	one would not be
<b>men/tä/neen</b>	<b>ei men/tä/ne</b>	one may not/probably will not go
<b>sano/tta/koon</b>	<b>älkөөn sano/tta/ko</b>	let one not say
<b>teh/tä/isi/in</b>	<b>ei teh/tä/isi</b>	one would not do
<b>rakenne/tta/isi/in</b>	<b>ei rakenne/tta/isi</b>	one would not build
<b>todet/ta/ne/en</b>	<b>ei todet/ta/ne</b>	one may not/probably will not verify

Examples:

**Tätä ei sano/tta/isi, jos ei olisi aiheutta.**

This would not be said if there were no cause.

**Voi/ta/isi/in/ko tehdä näin?**

Could one do it this way?

**Ei voi/ta/isi.**

One could not.

**Päätet/tä/ne/en, että...**

It may be decided that...

**Mitä sano/tta/isi/in, jos...**

What would people say if...

**Ei kai sano/tta/isi mitään.**

I suppose nothing would be said.

**Lakko lopete/tta/isi/in, jos pääs/tä/isi/in sopimukseen.**

The strike would be ended if an agreement could be reached.

**Ovea älkөөn avat/ta/ko liian nopeasti.**

Let the door not be opened too quickly.

**Tätä päätöstä ei siis teh/tä/ne.**

This decision will thus probably not be made.



## 17 INFINITIVES

- *General*
- *First infinitive*
- *Second infinitive*
- *Third infinitive*
- *Fourth infinitive*

### §73 GENERAL

Infinitives and participles constitute the set of non-finite verb forms, which all lack personal endings. The basic structure of the infinitives has been presented above (§14). Each of the infinitives has its own marker, a functional ending without any actual meaning. Some infinitives occur also in the passive (particularly the second infinitive), and some may take several case endings (particularly the third infinitive). Under certain conditions the first and second infinitives may also be followed by possessive suffixes. All the infinitives can take enclitic particles. Infinitives are never marked for number.

The infinitives function in a sentence as nouns, being nominal forms of verbs; the participles function as adjectives. The examples below illustrate the similarities between infinitives and nouns proper.

<b>Haluan omena/n.</b>	I want <i>an apple</i> . (noun)
<b>Haluan ui/da.</b>	I want <i>to swim</i> . (first inf.)
<b>Haluan osta/a omenan.</b>	I want <i>to buy</i> an apple. (first inf.)
<b>Nälkä katoaa minuuti/ssa.</b>	Hunger disappears <i>in a minute</i> . (noun in inessive)
<b>Nälkä katoaa syö/de/ssä.</b>	Hunger disappears as one eats ( <i>'in eating'</i> ). (second inf. in inessive)
<b>Menen Helsinki/in.</b>	I'm going <i>to Helsinki</i> . (noun in illative)
<b>Menen ulos juokse/ma/an.</b>	I'm going out <i>to run</i> . (third inf. in illative)
<b>Satamaan pääsee myös linja- auto/lla.</b>	One can also get to the harbour <i>by bus</i> . (noun in adessive)
<b>Oppii myös luke/ma/lla.</b>	One also learns <i>by reading</i> . (third inf. in adessive)

## §74 FIRST INFINITIVE

### §74.1 BASIC FORM OF THE FIRST INFINITIVE

The first infinitive appears in two cases: the basic form, with only the infinitive ending (e.g. **sano/a** ‘(to) say’, **saa/da** ‘(to) get’); and the translative case, where the infinitive ending is followed by the ending **-kse-** (cf. §50) and a possessive suffix.

The first infinitive endings have been given above (§22). This infinitive is the dictionary form of verbs, for example in the *Nykysuomen sanakirja* (‘Dictionary of Modern Standard Finnish’) and many Finnish language textbooks. There are four different endings: (1) **-a ~ -ä**, (2) **-da ~ -dä**, (3) **-ta ~ -tä**, (4) **-la ~ -lä, -ra ~ -rä, -na ~ -nä**. The forms and their use are illustrated below.

(1) <b>osta/a</b>	buy	(2) <b>tuo/da</b>	bring
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	<b>jää/dä</b>	stay
<b>varat/a</b>	reserve	<b>saa/da</b>	get
<b>levät/ä</b>	rest	<b>kanavoi/da</b>	direct
(3) <b>juos/ta</b>	run	(4) <b>ol/la</b>	be
<b>nous/ta</b>	rise	<b>kysel/lä</b>	ask
<b>valais/ta</b>	light	<b>pur/ra</b>	bite
<b>väris/tä</b>	shiver	<b>men/nä</b>	go

**Aion lähte/ä ulos.**

I intend *to go* out.

**Yritämme ymmärtä/ä.**

We try *to understand*.

**Mitä haluat syö/dä?**

What do you want *to eat*?

**Saat lainat/a tämän kirjan.**

You may *borrow* this book.

**Teillä on oikeus otta/a yksi kuva.**

You have the right *to take* one picture.

**On aika vaikea oppi/a suomea.**

It is quite difficult *to learn* Finnish.

**Onko sinulla jo ollut**

Have you already had an opportunity

**mahdollisuus tilat/a?**

*to order?*

**Teidän täytyy tul/la meille!**

You must *come* to us/our place.

**Täytyy aja/a varovasti.**

One must *drive* carefully.

**Anna hänen men/nä!**

Let him/her *go*!

**Antakaa Kallen men/nä!**

Let Kalle *go*!

**Koneessa täytyy ol/la vika.**

There must *be* some fault in the machine.

**Vian täytyy ol/la koneessa.**

The fault must *be* in the machine.

**Minulla on ajatus lähte/ä Unkariin ensi kesänä.**

I am thinking of *going* (‘I have the thought *to go*’) to Hungary next summer.

**Pakolaisten sallittiin poistu/a maasta.**

The refugees were allowed *to leave* the country.

Particular attention should be paid to the special verbs of obligation (**täytyy** ‘must’, **pitää** ‘have to’) and permission (**antaa x:n tehdä jotakin** ‘let *x* do something’; **sallia** ‘allow’), which often co-occur with the genitive (**antakaa Kalle/n mennä; via/n täytyy olla koneessa** (see the examples above)) and are followed by the first infinitive (**antakaa Kallen men/nä; vian täytyy olla koneessa**).

## §74.2 FIRST INFINITIVE TRANSLATIVE

The basic form of the first infinitive may be followed by the translative ending **-kse-** and a possessive suffix corresponding to the person of the subject. This structure usually expresses the idea of aim or purpose.

<i>Root</i>	<i>First inf.</i>	<i>Transl. case</i>	<i>Poss. suff.</i>	<i>Enclitic particle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>sano</b>	<b>a</b>	<b>kse</b>	<b>ni</b>		in order that I shall say
<b>elä</b>	<b>ä</b>	<b>kse</b>	<b>mme</b>		in order that we shall live
<b>oppi</b>	<b>a</b>	<b>kse</b>	<b>en</b>	<b>han</b>	in order to learn (third p.)+emphasis
<b>tavat</b>	<b>a</b>	<b>kse</b>	<b>si</b>		in order that you shall meet
<b>juo</b>	<b>da</b>	<b>kse</b>	<b>en</b>		in order to drink (third p.)
<b>ol</b>	<b>la</b>	<b>kse</b>	<b>nne</b>		in order that you shall be

Examples:

<b>Lähdin Hollantiin levät/ä/kse/ni.</b>	I went to Holland <i>in order to rest</i> .
<b>Ihminen syö elä/ä/kse/en.</b>	Man eats <i>in order to live</i> .
<b>Elätkö syö/dä/kse/si?</b>	Do you live <i>in order to eat</i> ?
<b>Pyörähdin men/nä/kse/ni.</b>	I turned round <i>in order to go</i> .

**Monet suomalaiset menevät Ruotsiin saa/da/kse/en työtä.**  
Many Finns go to Sweden *in order to find* (‘get’) work.

<b>Otatko työn teh/dä/kse/si?</b>	Do you undertake <i>to do</i> the job?
<b>Muista/a/kse/ni asia on näin.</b>	<i>As far as I remember</i> it’s like this.

**Tietä/ä/kse/mme hän ei ole täällä.**  
*As far as we know* he/she is not here.

**Osku on hyvin voimakas ol/la/kse/en niin pieni.**  
Osku is very strong for such a small man (‘*to be* so small’).

## §75 SECOND INFINITIVE

### §75.1 SECOND INFINITIVE INESSIVE

The second infinitive has two cases: the inessive case **-ssa ~ -ssä** expressing time, and the instructive case **-n** expressing manner. The instructive form is rarer.

A possessive suffix is often used with the inessive to mark the subject, e.g. **sano/e/ssa/ni** ‘when I say’. The inessive form also occurs in the passive, e.g. **sano/tta/e/ssa** ‘when one says’. Generally speaking, the second infinitive inessive can be said to correspond to a temporal subordinate clause beginning with **kun** ‘when, as’.

The simplest way to form the stem of the second infinitive is given by the following rule (see §14 for some of the different endings).

The second infinitive is formed by changing the **-a ~ -ä** of the first infinitive to **-e**.

<i>First infinitive</i>	<i>Meaning</i>	<i>Second infinitive stem</i>
<b>sano/a</b>	say	<b>sano/e-</b>
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	<b>vetä/e-</b>
<b>herät/ä</b>	wake	<b>herät/e-</b>
<b>tilat/a</b>	order	<b>tilat/e-</b>
<b>saa/da</b>	get	<b>saa/de-</b>
<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	<b>myy/de-</b>
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>ol/e-</b>
<b>men/nä</b>	go	<b>men/ne-</b>
<b>havait/a</b>	observe	<b>havait/e-</b>

If the first infinitive stem ends in **-e**, this changes to **-i** in the second infinitive.

<i>First infinitive</i>	<i>Meaning</i>	<i>Second infinitive stem</i>
<b>luke/a</b>	read	<b>luki/e-</b>
<b>itke/ä</b>	cry	<b>itki/e-</b>
<b>tunte/a</b>	feel	<b>tunti/e-</b>
<b>koke/a</b>	experience	<b>koki/e-</b>

The passive forms of the second infinitive can be derived most easily by adding **-e-** to the passive stem, which is arrived at according to the first rule given in §72 (change the passive past tense **-iin** to **-a ~ -ä**; the passive stem **sano/tta-** is thus derived from the form **sano/ttiin**). The forms of the second infinitive are shown in the following table.

<i>Root</i>	<i>Pass.</i>	<i>Inf.</i>	<i>Case</i>	<i>Poss.</i>	<i>Particle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>sano</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>	<b>ni</b>		when I say
<b>sano</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>	<b>nne</b>		when you (pl.) say

	<i>Root</i>	<i>Pass.</i>	<i>Inf.</i>	<i>Case</i>	<i>Poss. suff.</i>	<i>Particle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
	<b>sano</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>n</b>			saying
	<b>sano</b>	<b>tta</b>	<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>			when one says
	<b>sano</b>	<b>tta</b>	<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>		<b>han</b>	when one says +emphasis
	<b>sano</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>	<b>mme</b>	<b>kin</b>	when we say too
	<b>ol</b>		<b>le</b>	<b>ssa</b>	<b>ni</b>		when I am
	<b>ol</b>	<b>ta</b>	<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>			when one is
	<b>juo</b>		<b>de</b>	<b>ssa</b>	<b>an</b>		when he/she drinks
	<b>juo</b>	<b>ta</b>	<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>			when one drinks
<b>Pekka</b>	<b>herät</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>ssä</b>			when Pekka wakes
	<b>herät</b>	<b>tä</b>	<b>e</b>	<b>ssä</b>			when one wakes
	<b>lukij</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>	<b>nne</b>		when you read
<b>Kallen</b>	<b>tuntij</b>		<b>e</b>	<b>ssa</b>			when Kalle feels

The second infinitive inessive thus corresponds to a temporal subordinate clause, particularly one in which the action referred to is simultaneous with the action of the verb in the main clause, e.g. **sano/e/ssa/ni tämän kaikki nousivat** ‘as I was saying/when I said this everyone stood up’.

The subject of the temporal clause appears in the inessive construction as follows:

The subject is expressed

- by a possessive suffix alone, if the subject is identical with that of the main clause;
- by an independent word in the genitive, if the subject is different from that of the main clause;
- by the genitive form of personal pronouns (**minun**, etc.), always followed by a possessive suffix on the infinitive inessive (unstressed first and second personal pronouns may be omitted).

*Kun clause*

**Kun oli/n Ruotsissa, tapasi/n useita ystäviä.**

When I was in Sweden I met many friends.

*Second infinitive inessive*

**Oll/e/ssa/ni Ruotsissa tapasin useita ystäviä.**

**Kun Pekka heräsi, hän oli sairas. Herät/e/ssä/än Pekka oli sairas.**

When Pekka woke up he was ill.

*Kun clause*

*Second infinitive inessive*

**Kun ajalt, sinun pitää olla varovainen.**

**Aja/e/ssa/si sinun pitää olla varovainen.**

When *you* drive *you* must be careful.

**Kalevi ajattelee paremmin, kun hän juo kahvia.**

**Kalevi ajattelee paremmin juo/de/ssa/an kahvia.**

*Kalevi* thinks better when *he* drinks coffee.

**Ihmiset nauttivat, kun he lähtevät lomalle.**

**Ihmiset nauttivat lähti/e/ssä/än lomalle.**

*People* enjoy themselves when *they* go on holiday.

**Kun Pekka herää, Liisa lähtee töihin.**

**Peka/n herät/e/ssä Liisa lähtee töihin.**

When *Pekka* wakes, *Liisa* goes to work.

**Viren tuli maaliin, kun Päivärinta oli vielä loppusuoralle.**

**Viren tuli maaliin Päivärinna/n ol/le/ssa vielä loppusuoralla.**

*Viren* arrived at the finish when *Päivärinta* was still on the final straight.

**Muut nukkuivat, kun hän heräsi.**

**Muut nukkuivat häne/n herät/e/ssä/än.**

*The others* were sleeping when *he/she* woke.

**Vaimoni heräsi, kun (minä) tuli/n kotiin.**

**Vaimoni heräsi (minun) tul/le/ssa/ni kotiin.**

*My wife* woke up when *I* came home.

The following examples show the use of the passive form of the inessive structure.

**Turkuun tul/ta/e/ssa satoi.**

When *one (we)* came to Turku it was raining.

**Musiikkia kuunnel/ta/e/ssa pitää olla hiljaa.**

When listening to music *one* must be quiet.

**Ikkunan pitää olla auki nuku/tta/e/ssa.**

The window must be open when *one* sleeps.

**Tästä setelistä Suomen Pankki maksaa vaadi/tta/e/ssa sata mk.**

For this note the Bank of Finland will pay 100 marks on demand ('when *one* demands').

As has been said, this inessive structure is used to refer to an action simultaneous with that of the main clause. If the action of the **kun** clause has taken place before the action of the main clause a different structure is used, the partitive form of the past participle (§83):

<b>Ile/n herät/ty/ä Mia lähti töihin.</b>	When Ile had woken up Mia went off to work.
<b>Jäät lähtivät kevää/n tul/tu/a.</b>	The ice melted ('left') when spring came.

## §75.2 SECOND INFINITIVE INSTRUCTIVE

This form is derived by adding the instructive ending **-n** to the infinitive stem arrived at according to the basic rule (§75.1), e.g. **sano/e/n** 'saying', **naura/e/n** 'laughing', **hymyil/le/n** 'smiling', **huomat/e/n** 'noticing'. This structure mainly indicates manner, and most commonly occurs in a number of fixed expressions.

<b>Lapsi tuli itki/e/n kotiin.</b>	The child came home <i>crying</i> .
<b>He astuivat naura/e/n sisään ovesta.</b>	They stepped in through the door <i>laughing</i> .
<b>Kyllä sinne kävell/le/n/kin pääsee.</b>	One can also get there on foot ('walking') all right.
<b>kaikesta päättä/e/n</b>	by all accounts ('deciding from everything')
<b>illan tul/le/n</b>	in the evening/when the evening comes
<b>Kalle nauroi kaikkien näh/de/n.</b>	Kalle laughed in full view of everybody ('everybody <i>seeing</i> ').
<b>näin ol/le/n</b>	this being the case ('so <i>being</i> ')

## §76 THIRD INFINITIVE

### §76.1 FORMATION

The third infinitive, which has the ending **-ma-** ~ **-mä-**, is a common and important form in both the written and spoken language. It occurs in five cases: the inessive **-ssa** ~ **-ssä**, the elative **-sta** ~ **-stä**, the illative **-Vn**, the adessive **-lla** ~ **-llä**, and the abessive **-tta** ~ **-ttä**.

The stem of the third infinitive is formed by adding **-ma-** ~ **-mä-** to the inflectional stem of the verb (§23).

The inflectional stem can be derived from the third person singular of the present indicative, by detaching the personal ending.

<i>First inf.</i>	<i>Meaning</i>	<i>Third p. sing present</i>	<i>Third infinitive stem</i>
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	<b>vetä/ä</b>	<b>vetä/<u>mä</u>-</b>
<b>otta/a</b>	take	<b>otta/a</b>	<b>otta/<u>ma</u>-</b>
<b>rakenta/a</b>	build	<b>rakenta/a</b>	<b>rakenta/<u>ma</u>-</b>
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	<b>huomaa</b>	<b>huomaa/<u>ma</u>-</b>
<b>kaivat/a</b>	long for	<b>kaipaa</b>	<b>kaipaa/<u>ma</u>-</b>
<b>levät/ä</b>	rest	<b>lepää</b>	<b>lepää/<u>mä</u>-</b>
<b>maat/a</b>	lie	<b>makaa</b>	<b>makaa/<u>ma</u>-</b>
<b>lyö/dä</b>	hit	<b>lyö</b>	<b>lyö/<u>mä</u>-</b>
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>on</b>	<b>ole/<u>ma</u>- (NB!)</b>
<b>tul/la</b>	come	<b>tule/e</b>	<b>tule/<u>ma</u>-</b>
<b>men/nä</b>	go	<b>mene/e</b>	<b>mene/<u>mä</u>-</b>
<b>valit/a</b>	choose	<b>valitse/e</b>	<b>valitse/<u>ma</u></b>

The following table shows the forms of the third infinitive.

<i>Root</i>	<i>Inf.</i>	<i>Case</i>	<i>Particle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>lepää</b>	<b>mä</b>	<b>ssä</b>		resting
<b>lepää</b>	<b>mä</b>	<b>än</b>		to rest
<b>lepää</b>	<b>mä</b>	<b>än</b>	<b>kö</b>	to rest?
<b>vetä</b>	<b>mä</b>	<b>llä</b>		by pulling
<b>vetä</b>	<b>mä</b>	<b>llä</b>	<b>kin</b>	also by pulling
<b>mainitse</b>	<b>ma</b>	<b>tta</b>		without mentioning
<b>mainitse</b>	<b>ma</b>	<b>tta</b>	<b>kaan</b>	without mentioning, either
<b>teke</b>	<b>mä</b>	<b>stä</b>		from doing

## §76.2 THIRD INFINITIVE INESSIVE

The inessive indicates an ongoing action or process; it usually occurs together with the verb **ol/la** ‘be’, and occasionally also with other verbs expressing a state.

**Ville on kirjastossa luke/ma/ssa.**

Ville is in the library *reading*.

**Veljeni on opiskele/ma/ssa Tampereella.**

My brother is *studying* at Tampere.

**Lapset ovat ulkona leikki/mä/ssä.**

The children are outside *playing*.

**Olitko jo nukku/ma/ssa kun soitin?**

Were you already *sleeping/asleep* when I rang?

**Kalle ja Pekka ovat olutta osta/ma/ssa.**

Kalle and Pekka are *buying* some beer.



**Huomenna käyn äitiäni *katsoma/ssa*.**

Tomorrow I'll *go and see* my mother.

**Istumme juuri *syö/mä/ssä*.**

Just now we are sitting *eating*.

**Pyykki on *kuivu/ma/ssa*.**

The washing is *drying*.

### §76.3 THIRD INFINITIVE ELATIVE

The elative form co-occurs with verbs indicating concrete or abstract movement, e.g. **tul/la** 'come' and **palat/a** 'return', to express coming 'from doing something'. Note in addition the verbs below which are always followed by the third infinitive.

<b>estä/ä</b>	prevent	<b>pelasta/a</b>	save
<b>esty/ä</b>	be prevented	<b>pelastu/a</b>	be saved
<b>kieltä/ä</b>	forbid	<b>varo/a</b>	beware of
<b>kieltäyty/ä</b>	refuse	<b>varoitta/a</b>	warn
<b>lakat/a</b>	cease	<b>välttä/ä</b>	avoid

**Tuula tuli rannalta *ui/ma/sta*.**

Tuula *came* from the beach, where she had been swimming ('*from swimming*').

**Eva palasi Turusta *opiskele/ma/sta*.**

Eva *returned from studying at* ('from') Turku.

**Silja lakkasi *itke/mä/stä*.**

Silja *stopped crying*.

**Kieltäydyn *polttama/sta savukkeita*.**

I *refuse to smoke* cigarettes.

**Älä estä minua *näke/mä/stä!***

Don't *prevent me from seeing!*

**Hän pelasti minut *hukku/ma/sta*.**

He/she *saved me from drowning*.

### §76.4 THIRD INFINITIVE ILLATIVE

The illative form is used after verbs of movement and indicates an action which is about to begin. Note in particular the structure **tul/la** 'come'+third infinitive illative, which refers to future time, e.g. **Tule/n palaa/ma/an** 'I will return'. The most common verbs followed by the third infinitive illative are the following:

<b>joutu/a</b>	come, be made to	<b>pysty/ä</b>	be capable
<b>jättä/ä</b>	leave	<b>pyytä/ä</b>	request
<b>jää/dä</b>	stay	<b>pääs/tä</b>	get
<b>kehotta/a</b>	urge	<b>ruvet/a</b>	begin
<b>kyet/ä</b>	be able	<b>ryhty/ä</b>	set about
<b>käske/ä</b>	command	<b>sattu/a</b>	happen
<b>pakotta/a</b>	force		

**Menen ulos syö/mä/än.**

I'm going out *to eat*.

**Tanssi/ma/an/ko te menette?**

Are you really going *dancing*?

**Matkustan maalle lepää/mä/än.**

I'm going into the country *to rest*.

**Illalla tulen teille sauno/ma/an.**

In the evening I'll come to your house *to have a sauna*.

**Lähden hake/ma/an lapset koulusta.**

I'll *go and fetch* the children from school.

**Menetkö kotiin nukku/ma/an?**

Are you going home *to sleep*?

**Tulen lähte/mä/än pois.**

I will *go away*.

**Jätin Kallen kotiin luke/ma/an.**

I left Kalle at home *to read*.

**Jään vielä työskentele/mä/än.**

I'll stay a bit longer *to do some work*.

**Kehotan teitä lopetta/ma/an tupakoimisen.**

I urge you *to give up* smoking.

**Poliisi käski meitä poistu/ma/an.**

The policeman ordered us *to leave*.

**Pystytkö aja/ma/an Helsinkiin?**

Can you *drive* to Helsinki?

**Tuija pyysi minua tanssi/ma/an.**

Tuija asked me *to dance*.

**Illalla rupesi sata/ma/an.**

In the evening it began *to rain*.

**Reijo sattui ole/ma/an paikalla.**

Reijo happened *to be* there.

The third infinitive illative also occurs after certain adjectives, of which the most frequent are: **halukas** 'willing', **innostunut** 'keen', **kiinnostunut** 'interested', **valmis** 'ready'.

**Kuka on halukas vastaa/ma/an?**

Who is willing *to answer*?

**En ole innokas tule/ma/an.**

I'm not keen *to come*.

**Olen kyllä kiinnostunut osta/ma/an pesukoneen.**

Yes, I am interested *in buying a* washing-machine.

**Karikin on valmis lähte/mä/än syö/mä/än.**

Kari too is ready *to go and eat*.

## §76.5 THIRD INFINITIVE ADESSIVE AND ABESSIVE

The adessive indicates means, and sometimes manner.

**Voitin miljoonan veikkaa/ma/lla.**

I won a million *by betting*.

**Sinne pääsee mukavasti kävele/mä/llä.**

One can get there easily on foot (*'by walking'*).

**Hän elää kirjoitta/ma/lla kirjoja.**

He/she lives *by writing* books.

**Kieliä oppii parhaiten puhu/ma/lla.**

One learns languages best *by talking*.

The meaning of the abessive is ‘without’; the object takes the partitive (cf. §33.2). If there is a subject it takes the genitive, and if it is a personal pronoun the verb also takes a possessive suffix.

**Sehän on sano/ma/tta/kin selvää.**

That goes *without saying* (‘is clear *without one saying*’).

**Syö/mä/ttä ja juo/ma/tta ei elä.**

*Without eating and drinking* one cannot live.

**Kalle teki sen (meidän) tietä/mä/ttä/mme.**

Kalle did it *without our knowing*.

**Myyjä tuli sisään Leenan huomaa/ma/tta mitään.**

The seller came in *without Leena noticing* anything.

**Koira karkasi hänen huomaa/ma/tta/an.**

The dog ran away *without his/her noticing*.

The forms in **-ma-** ~ **-mä-** are also used adjectivally in what is called the agent construction (§84). A few examples:

**Kalle/n osta/ma auto**

the car Kalle *bought/bought* by Kalle

**Oletko istunut Kalle/n osta/ma/ssa autossa?**

Have you sat in the car Kalle *bought*?

**En ole nähnyt Kalle/n osta/ma/a autoa.**

I have not seen the car Kalle *bought*.

## §77 FOURTH INFINITIVE

The fourth infinitive has the ending **-niinen**, which is added to the inflectional stem of the verb (cf. §23; §76.1). Examples:

<i>First infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing</i>	<i>Fourth infinitive</i>
<b>tietä/ä</b>	know	<b>tietä/ä</b>	<b>tietä/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>suoritta/a</b>	perform	<b>suoritta/a</b>	<b>suoritta/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>halut/a</b>	want	<b>halua/a</b>	<b>halua/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>todet/a</b>	verify	<b>totea/a</b>	<b>totea/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>lakat/a</b>	cease	<b>lakkaa</b>	<b>lakkaa/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>jää/dä</b>	stay	<b>jää</b>	<b>jää/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>on</b>	<b>ole/<u>minen</u></b>

<i>First infinitive</i>		<i>Third p. sing</i>	<i>Fourth infinitive</i>
<b>juos/ta</b>	run	<b>juokse/e</b>	<b>juokse/<u>minen</u></b>
<b>havait/a</b>	observe	<b>havaitse/e</b>	<b>havaitse/<u>minen</u></b>

The fourth infinitive has only two rare forms: the nominative, indicating obligation, and the corresponding partitive.

- (a) **Minun on mene/minen sinne.** (nom.)  
I *must go* there.
- (b) **Tämä tehtävä on suoritta/minen.** (nom.)  
This task *must be carried out*.
- (c) **Sinne ei ole mene/mis/tä.** (part.)  
One *must not go* there.

Note that the genitive case is used for the person obliged to do something, i.e. **minu/n** 'I (gen.)' in the first example above.

More common ways than the fourth infinitive of expressing this meaning of obligation are for example:

- (a) **Minun täytyy mennä ~ pitää mennä ~ on mentävä sinne.**
- (b) **Tämä tehtävä on suoritettava ~ pitää suorittaa.**
- (c) **Sinne ei pidä mennä.**

A much more frequent **-minen** form is that used to mark nouns derived from verbs (deverbal nouns: see further §93.1). A few examples:

<b>Tupakoi/minen on täällä kielletty.</b>	<i>Smoking is forbidden here.</i>
<b>Auton aja/minen on hankalaa.</b>	<i>Driving a car is difficult.</i>
<b>Sauno/minen on mukavaa.</b>	<i>Having a sauna is nice.</i>

## 18 PARTICIPLES

- *General*
- *Present participle active*
- *Present participle passive*
- *The past participles*
- *The participial construction*
- *The temporal construction*
- *The agent construction*

### §78 GENERAL

Like infinitives, participles are non-finite verb forms: they are not inflected for person. Finnish has two participles, the present and the past. Both have active and passive forms; cf. §14, where all the non-finite forms were introduced. The four participle forms of the verb **sano/a** ‘say’ are:

	<i>Active</i>		<i>Passive</i>	
<i>Present</i>	<b>sano/va</b>	saying	<b>sano/tta/va</b>	which is to be said
<i>Past</i>	<b>sano/nut</b>	said	<b>sano/ttu</b>	said

The participles function partly as verbs, e.g. (**olen**) **sano/nut** ‘(I have) said’ (§61) and (**on**) **sano/ttu** ‘(one has) said’ (§71), and partly as adjectives. In this latter function participles inflect in the normal adjectival way for number and case:

<i>pitkä mies</i>	a tall man
<i>syö/vä mies</i>	an eating man
<i>syö/nyt mies</i>	a man who has eaten
<i>lyö/tä/vä mies</i>	a man who is to be hit
<i>lyö/ty mies</i>	a man who was hit/a beaten man
<i>pitkä/t miehe/t</i>	the tall men
<i>syö/vä/t miehe/t</i>	the eating men
<i>syö/nee/t miehe/t</i>	the men who have eaten
<i>lyö/tä/vä/t miehe/t</i>	the men who are to be hit
<i>lyö/dy/t miehe/t</i>	the men who were hit

As premodifiers, participles are thus subject to the normal rules of concord for attributes (§31).

Participles also have other uses. For instance, all the participles (inflected in the genitive) can be used in what is called the participial construction, which corresponds to an **että** ‘that’ clause (§82):

<b>Näen, että Pekka tulee.</b>	~ <b>Näen Peka/n tule/va/n.</b>
I see that Pekka is coming.	I see Pekka <i>coming</i> .
<b>Näen, että Pekka on tullut.</b>	~ <b>Näen Peka/n tull/lee/n.</b>
I see that Pekka has come.	I see that Pekka <i>has come</i> .

The past participle passive, inflected in the partitive, may be used to replace a temporal subordinate clause indicating an action previous to that of the main clause (§83; cf. also §75.1):

<b>Nukahdin, kun Pekka oli tullut.</b>	<b>Nukahdin Peka/n tul/tu/a.</b>
I fell asleep when Pekka had come.	I fell asleep ‘Pekka <i>having come</i> ’/ when Pekka <i>had come</i> .

The third infinitive stem (**-ma-** ~ **-mä-**, see §76.1) is used in the agent construction to replace a relative clause:

<b>Peka/n osta/ma auto</b>	<b>auto, jonka Pekka oli ostanut</b>
the car <i>bought</i> by Pekka	the car which Pekka had bought

## §79 PRESENT PARTICIPLE ACTIVE

This form has the ending **-va-** ~ **-vä-**, which is added to the inflectional stem of the verb (§23). It indicates a continuing action or process.

<i>First infinitive</i>	<i>Third p. sing.</i>	<i>Present participle</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>kerto/a</b>	<b>kerto/o</b>	<b>kerto/va</b>	telling
<b>kylpe/ä</b>	<b>kylpe/e</b>	<b>kylpe/vä</b>	bathing
<b>luvata</b>	<b>luvaa</b>	<b>luvaa/va</b>	promising
<b>kadota</b>	<b>katoa/a</b>	<b>katoa/va</b>	disappearing
<b>määrät/ä</b>	<b>määrää</b>	<b>määrää/vä</b>	ordering
<b>soi/da</b>	<b>soi</b>	<b>soi/va</b>	ringing
<b>men/nä</b>	<b>mene/e</b>	<b>mene/vä</b>	going
<b>olla</b>	<b>on</b>	<b>ole/va</b>	being
<b>häirit/ä</b>	<b>häiritse/e</b>	<b>häiritse/vä</b>	disturbing
<b>ratkais/ta</b>	<b>ratkaise/e</b>	<b>ratkaise/va</b>	deciding

The present participle often corresponds to a relative clause with a present tense verb:

**Pihalla seisova auto on sininen.** *Auto, joka seisoo pihalla, on sininen.*  
The car *standing/which is standing* in the yard is blue.

**Oletko nähnyt pihalla seisova/n auton?** **Oletko nähnyt auton, joka seisoo pihalla?**

Have you seen the car *standing/which is standing* in the yard?

**työtä teke/vä luokka**  
the *working* class

**luokka, joka tekee työtä**

**Pihalla on huuta/v/i/a lapsia.**

In the yard there are children *shouting/who are shouting*.

**Pihalla on lapsia, jotka huutavat.**

**Ratkaise/va/t päätökset tehdään nyt.**

*The final decisions/decisions which are final are made now.*

**Päätökset, jotka ovat ratkaisevia, tehdään nyt.**

**hyvää musiikkia soitta/va yhtye**

a band *playing/which plays* good music

**yhtye, joka soittaa hyvää musiikkia**

The examples also show that where a participle functioning as an attribute takes an object or adverbial, these appear before the participle: *musiikkia soittava yhtye* (object); *pihalla seisova auto* (adverbial).

## §80 PRESENT PARTICIPLE PASSIVE

This form is most conveniently derived from the past tense passive (cf. §80) by the following rule (which is the same as that for the derivation of the passive moods, §72).

Change the passive past tense **-iin** to **-a** or **-ä** and add **-va-** ~ **-vä-**.

Example: **sano/ttiin** ‘one said’ → **sano/tta/va**. These participles have various special meanings. Usually they correspond to the following types of relative clause:

- sano/tta/va asia** (1) a thing that *must/has to be/is to be said*  
 (2) a thing that *can be said*  
 (3) a thing that *will be said*  
 (4) a thing that *is said*

<i>First infinitive</i>	<i>Past tense passive</i>	<i>Present participle passive</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
<b>kerto/a</b>	<b>kerro/ttiin</b>	<b>kerro/tta/va</b>	which is to be told
<b>luke/a</b>	<b>lue/ttiin</b>	<b>lue/tta/va</b>	“ read
<b>johta/a</b>	<b>johde/ttiin</b>	<b>johde/tta/va</b>	“ led
<b>huomat/a</b>	<b>huomat/tiin</b>	<b>huomat/ta/va</b>	“ noticed
<b>pelät/ä</b>	<b>pelät/tiin</b>	<b>pelät/tä/vä</b>	“ feared
<b>rakenta/a</b>	<b>rakennet/tiin</b>	<b>rakenne/tta/va</b>	“ built
<b>juo/da</b>	<b>juo/tiin</b>	<b>juo/ta/va</b>	“ drunk
<b>ajatel/la</b>	<b>ajatel/tiin</b>	<b>ajatel/ta/va</b>	“ thought
<b>hävit/ä</b>	<b>hävit/tiin</b>	<b>hävit/tä/vä</b>	“ lost

The use of these participles will become clearer from the following examples. All the meanings (1)–(4) are possible, depending on the context.

**syö/tä/vä sieni**

an *edible* mushroom ('that *can be eaten*')

**Tämä ei ole suosittel/ta/va kirja.**

This is not a book *that can be recommended*.

**Nämä eivät ole suosittel/ta/v/i/a kirjoja.**

These are not books *that can be recommended*.

**Onko teillä ilmoite/tta/v/i/a tuloja?**

Do you have any income *to be declared*?

**Onko jääkaapissa jotain juo/ta/va/a?**

Is there anything *to drink* in the fridge?

**Ei tämä ole mikään pelät/tä/vä koira!**

This is no dog *to be feared/there is no need to be afraid* of this dog!

**Onko teillä tarvit/ta/va pääoma?**

Do you have the *necessary* capital?

**Ratkais/ta/va/t kysymykset ovat...**

The questions *to be solved* are...

**Onko vielä jotain lisät/tä/vä/ä?**

Is there still something *to be added*?

**Minulla ei ole muuta sano/tta/va/a.**

I have nothing else *to say*.

**Lainat/ta/va/t kirjat ovat oikealla.**

The books *that can be borrowed* are on the right.

**Viimeinen suorite/tta/v/i/sta töistä oli vaikein.**

The last of the tasks *to be done* was the most difficult.

The present participle passive is also used in a number of special ways, for instance to express obligation in structures such as the following:

subject in the genitive case+**on, oli, olisi, lienee**+present participle passive

**Minu/n on sano/tta/va tämä.**

I *must say* this.

**Mies/ten oli lähde/ttä/vä.**

The men *had to leave*.

**Nyt minun on syö/tä/vä.**

Now I *must eat*.



<b>On/ko sinun lähde/ttä/vä jo?</b>	<i>Do you have to leave already?</i>
<b>Meidän oli tilat/ta/va taksi.</b>	<i>We had to order a taxi.</i>
<b>Kaikkien on men/ttä/vä ulos.</b>	<i>Everyone must go out.</i>
<b>Pekan on usko/tta/va, että...</b>	<i>Pekka must believe that...</i>
<b>Heidän oli matkuste/tta/va Helsinkiin.</b>	<i>They had to go to Helsinki.</i>

The present participle passive inflected in the inessive plural, combined with **ol/la**, indicates that something can(not) be done.

<b>Onko Bill tavat/ta/v/i/ssa?</b>	<i>Is Bill in/available/'to be met with'?</i>
<b>Eikö johtaja ole tavat/ta/v/i/ssa?</b>	<i>Isn't the manager available?</i>
<b>Päätös on teh/tä/v/i/ssä.</b>	<i>The decision can be made.</i>
<b>Tämä asia ei ole muute/tta/v/i/ssa.</b>	<i>This matter cannot be altered.</i>

This participle also occurs in certain fixed expressions.

**Onko teillä huoneita vuokrat/ta/va/na?**

*Do you have rooms to let?*

**autoja myytä/vä/nä**

*cars for sale*

**Virka on julistettu hae/tta/va/ksi.**

*Applications are invited for the post. ('The post is declared to be applied for.')*

**Paavo on sairaalassa tutki/tta/va/na.**

*Paavo is in hospital for a check-up/to be examined.*

## §81 THE PAST PARTICIPLES

The past participles occur primarily in the compound tenses, i.e. the perfect and pluperfect, for example **on sano/nut** 'has said', **on sano/ttu** 'one has said'; **oli sano/nut** 'had said', **oli sano/ttu** 'one had said'. For the formation of these participles see §61, §71. By way of recapitulation, here are a few examples of this usage:

*Past participle (perfect tense active)*

<b>(minä) olen anta/nut</b>	<i>I have given</i>
<b>(sinä) olet anta/nut</b>	<i>you have given (sing.)</i>
<b>Pekka on anta/nut</b>	<i>Pekka has given</i>
<b>(me) olemme anta/neet</b>	<i>we have given</i>
<b>(te) olette anta/neet</b>	<i>you have given (pl.)</i>
<b>he ovat anta/neet</b>	<i>they have given</i>
<b>on anne/ttu</b>	<i>one has given</i>

The corresponding pluperfect forms are (**minä**) **olin anta/nut** ‘I had given’, **he olivat anta/neet** ‘they had given’, **oli anne/ttu** ‘one had given’, etc.

The past participles indicate completed action (**anta/nut, anne/ttu**), whereas the present participles indicate incomplete action (cf. §79, §80).

The past participles also occur as adjectivals, particularly as premodifiers, e.g. **lahjan anta/nut mies** ‘the man who gave the present’ and **anne/ttu lahja** ‘a present that has been/was given’. If a participle has its own objects or adverbials these are placed before the participle (cf. §79).

Examples follow, first of the use of the active participle (**-nut ~ -nyt**). The inflectional stem is **-nee-**.

**paljon matkusta/nut ihminen**

a much *travelled* person

**koke/nut lääkäri**

an *experienced* doctor

**Tunnen koke/nee/n lääkärin.**

I know an *experienced* doctor.

**En tunne koke/nut/ta lääkäriä.**

I don’t know an *experienced* doctor.

**pois juos/sut koira**

a dog *that has run* away

**Vietnamissa ol/lee/t ihmiset sanovat, että...**

People *who have been* in Vietnam say that...

**Eilen saapu/nee/t matkustajat ovat jo lähteneet.**

The travellers *who arrived* yesterday have already left.

**Viime syksynä ilmesty/nee/t kirjat ovat hyviä.**

The books *which were published* last autumn are good.

**Pommin löytä/nyt koira kuoli.**

The dog *which (had) found* the bomb died.

**Pommin löytä/nee/lle koiralle annettiin mitali.**

The dog *which (had) found* the bomb was given a medal.

**Näin pala/nee/n talon.**

I saw a *burnt/burned-down* house.

**Pala/nee/ssa talossa oli ollut ihmisiä.**

There had been people in the *burned-down* house.

**Oletteko väsy/nei/i/tä?**

Are you *tired*?

**He ovat hyvin koke/nei/i/ta.**

They are very *experienced*.

In the same way, the past participle passive **-(t)tu ~ -(t)ty** indicates a completed action performed by an unspecified agent.

**kaupasta oste/ttu kirja**

a book *bought* in a shop

**syksyllä rakenne/ttu talo**

a house *built* in the autumn

**He asuvat syksyllä rakenne/tu/ssa talossaan.**

They live in their house *which was built* in the autumn.

**hyväksytytty ehdotus**

an *accepted* proposal

**Hyväksytyt opiskelijat voivat jatkaa.**

Students *accepted* may continue.

**syö/ty piirakka**

a pie *that has been/was eaten*

**Eilen syö/dyt piirakat olivat hyviä.**

The pies *that were eaten* yesterday were good.

**anne/ttu lahja**

a present *that has been/was given*

**Anne/ttu/j/a lahjoja ei voi ottaa takaisin.**

Presents *that have been given* cannot be taken back.

**pelaste/ttu merimies**

a *rescued* sailor

**Pelaste/tu/t merimiehet olivat hyvässä kunnossa.**

The *rescued* sailors were in good shape.

**maalat/tu seinä**

a *painted* wall

**Seinät eivät ole maala/tu/t.**

The walls are not *painted*.

## §82 THE PARTICIPIAL CONSTRUCTION

The participial construction can be used to contract an affirmative **että** ('that') clause functioning as the object of certain verbs, e.g. **nähdä** 'see', **kuulla** 'hear', **uskoa** 'believe', **sanoa** 'say'. Both present and past participles appear in the participial construction, in both active and passive. The participle in the construction is always in the genitive (**-n**). The following forms occurring in the participial construction can thus be derived from the verb **itkeä** 'cry':

		<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Genitive</i>
<i>Present participle</i>	<i>(active)</i>	<b>itke/vä</b>	<b>itke/vä/n</b>
	<i>(passive)</i>	<b>itke/ttä/vä</b>	<b>itke/ttä/vän</b>
<i>Past participle</i>	<i>(active)</i>	<b>itke/nyt</b>	<b>itke/nee/n</b>
	<i>(passive)</i>	<b>itke/tty</b>	<b>itke/ty/n</b>

These forms are used in context as follows:

<i>Että clause</i>	<i>Participial construction</i>
<b>Näen, että Kalle itke/e.</b> I see that Kalle is crying/I see Kalle <i>crying</i> .	<b>Näen Kalle/n itke/vä/n.</b>
<b>Näen, että Kalle on itkenyt.</b> I see that Kalle <i>has been crying</i> .	<b>Näen Kalle/n itke/nee/n.</b>
<b>Näen, että täällä itke/tään.</b> I see that people <i>are crying</i> here.	<b>Näen täällä itke/ttä/vä/n.</b>
<b>Näen, että täällä on itke/tty.</b> I see that people <i>have been crying</i> here.	<b>Näen täällä itke/ty/n.</b>

The use of the present or past participle is determined by the temporal relation between the **että** clause and the main clause. The following rule is an important one:

The present participles are used if the action of the **että** clause takes place at the same time as, or later than, that of the main clause; the past participles are used if the action of the **että** clause is earlier than that of the main clause.

The subject of an **että** clause is expressed in the participial construction according to the following rule (which concerns active sentences only, since passive sentences have no subject!). Cf. the subject rule for the inessive structure (§75.1).

The subject of the **että** clause is expressed

- (a) by a possessive suffix alone, if the subject is the same as that of the main clause;
- (b) by a genitive form preceding the participle, if the subject is different from that of the main clause (also applies to personal pronouns!).

The examples that follow illustrate first the most common structure, i.e. with the present participle active (**-va/n ~ -vä/n**). This is used when the action of the **että** clause is simultaneous with or later than the action of the main clause. When part (a) of the above subject rule is applied, the genitive **-n** is dropped (§36).

*Että clause*

**Usko/n, että nuku/n.**

*I believe that I shall sleep.*

**Usko/t/ko, että nuku/t?**

*Do you believe that you will sleep?*

**Tiedä/n, että ole/n vanha.**

*I know that I am old.*

**Pekka luuli, että hän oli Lipponen.**

*Pekka thought he was Lipponen.*

**He sanoivat, että he tulisivat huomenna.**

*They said that they would come tomorrow.*

**Hän väittää, että hän on sairas.**

*He claims that he is ill.*

**Tuula huomasi, että hän itki.**

*Tuula noticed that she was crying.*

**Hallitus tietää, että se tulee eroamaan.**

*The government knows that it will resign.*

**Luule/mme, että lähde/mme huomenna.**

*We think that we shall leave tomorrow.*

**Tiedä/n, että hän on ulkomailla.**

*I know that he is abroad.*

**Luule/t/ko, että tiedä/n tämän?**

*Do you think that I know this?*

**Näi/mme, että he lähtivät.**

*We saw that they left/saw them leave.*

**Kuuli/mme, että lapsi huusi.**

*We heard that the child was shouting/heard the child shout.*

**Pekka kuuli, että juna saapui.**

*Pekka heard that the train was arriving/heard the train arrive.*

*Participial construction*

**Uskon nukku/va/ni.**

**Uskotko nukku/va/si?**

**Tiedän ole/va/ni vanha.**

**Pekka luuli ole/va/nsa Lipponen.**

**He sanoivat tule/va/nsa huomenna.**

**Hän väittää ole/va/nsa sairas.**

**Tuula huomasi itke/vä/nsä.**

**Hallitus tietää eroa/va/nsa.**

**Luulemme lähte/vä/mme huomenna.**

**Tiedän häne/n ole/va/n ulkomailla.**

**Luuletko minu/n tietä/vä/n tämän?**

**Näimme heidä/n lähte/vä/n.**

**Kuulimme lapse/n huuta/va/n.**

**Pekka kuuli juna/n saapu/va/n.**

**He luulevat, että suostu/ ehdotukseen.**

*They think that you will agree to the proposal.*

**He luulevat sinu/n suostu/va/n ehdotukseen.**

Note in particular that the personal pronoun subject of an **että** clause is expressed in the participial construction as a genitive form alone, e.g. ...**minu/n ole/va/n...** 'me being'. By contrast, the personal pronoun subject of a **kun** ('when') clause is expressed in the temporal construction both as a personal pronoun (optionally) and as a possessive suffix, e.g. ...(**minu/n**) **ol/le/ssa/ni...** 'when being' (first p. sing.). Cf. §83.

The following examples illustrate the use of the past participle active, which is used when the action of the **että** clause precedes that of the main clause.

*Että clause*

**Luule/n, että ole/n nukkunut.**

*I think I have slept.*

**Usko/t/ko, että nukui/t?**

*Do you think that you slept?*

**Tiedä/n, että oli/n sairas.**

*I know that I was ill.*

**Huomasi/mme, että oli/mme myöhästyneet.**

*We noticed that we were late.*

**He sanoivat, että he olivat tulleet jo eilen.**

*They said that they had already come yesterday.*

**Tuula huomasi, että hän oli itkenyt.**

*Tuula noticed that she had cried.*

**TPS tajusi, että se oli hävinnyt.**

*TPS (a sports team) realised that it had lost.*

**Tiedä/n, että hän on ollut ulkomailla.**

*I know that he has been abroad.*

**Luule/t/ko, että minä tiesin tämän? Luuletko minu/n tietä/nee/n tämän?**

*Do you think that I knew this?*

**Ymmärsi/mme, että he olivat lähteneet.**

*We understood that they had left/understood them to have left.*

*Participial construction*

**Luulen nukku/nee/ni.**

**Uskotko nukku/nee/si?**

**Tiedän ol/lee/ni sairas.**

**Huomasimme myöhästy/nee/mme.**

**He sanoivat tul/lee/nsa jo eilen.**

**Tuula huomasi itke/nee/nsä.**

**TPS tajusi hävin/nee/nsä.**

**Tiedän häne/n ol/lee/n ulkomailla.**

**Ymmärsimme heidä/n lähte/nee/n.**

**Pekka kuuli, että juna oli saapunut.**      **Pekka kuuli juna/n saapu/nee/n.**

*Pekka heard that the train had arrived.*

**He luulevat, että suostui/t ehdotukseen.**      **He luulevat sinu/n suostu/nee/n ehdotukseen.**

*They think that you agreed to the proposal.*

**Kerrottiin, että Virtanen oli kuollut.**      **Kerrottiin Virtase/n kuol/lee/n.**

*It was said that Virtanen had died/Virtanen was said to have died.*

The participial construction is particularly common with the following verbs: **näky/ä** ‘be seen’, **näyttä/ä** ‘seem’, **kuulu/a** ‘be heard’, **tuntu/a** ‘feel, seem’. The subject of the **että** clause becomes the subject of the main clause, and thus affects the concord of the verb (cf. **Näyttää (siltä), että auto on rikki** ‘It seems that the car is broken’ → **Auto näyttää olevan rikki** ‘The car seems to be broken’). Examples:

<b>Auto näyttää ole/va/n rikki.</b>	The car seems <i>to be</i> broken.
<b>Sinä näytät ole/va/n sairas.</b>	You seem <i>to be</i> ill.
<b>Auto näyttää ol/lee/n rikki.</b>	The car seems <i>to have been</i> broken.
<b>Sinä näytät ol/lee/n sairas.</b>	You seem <i>to have been</i> ill.
<b>Ahtisaari näyttää sano/va/n, että...</b>	Ahtisaari seems <i>to be saying</i> that...
<b>Ahtisaari näyttää sano/nee/n, että...</b>	Ahtisaari seems <i>to have said</i> that...
<b>Tilanne tuntuu vaikeutu/va/n.</b>	The situation seems <i>to be getting more difficult</i> .
<b>Tilanne tuntui vaikeutu/nee/n.</b>	The situation seemed <i>to have got more difficult</i> .
<b>Tilanne ei tunnu vaikeutu/va/n.</b>	The situation does not seem <i>to be getting more difficult</i> .
<b>Tilanne ei tuntunut vaikeutu/va/n.</b>	The situation did not seem <i>to be getting more difficult</i> .
<b>Tilanne ei tuntunut vaikeutu/nee/n.</b>	The situation did not seem <i>to have got more difficult</i> .

The next examples illustrate passive **että** clauses. If the action expressed by the verb in the subordinate clause is simultaneous with or later than the action expressed by the main clause, the form **-(t)ta/va/n ~ -(t)tä/vä/n** is used, and if the **että** clause action is earlier the form **-tu/n ~ -ty/n** is used.

<i>Että clause</i>	<i>Participial construction</i>
<b>Tiedän, että Ruotsissa puhu/taan myös suomea.</b>	<b>Tiedän Ruotsissa puhu/tta/va/n myös suomea.</b>

*I know that in Sweden Finnish is also spoken.*

**Kuulin, että sano/ttiin, että...**      **Kuulin sano/tta/va/n, että...**

I heard that *it was said* that.../I heard it *said* that...

**Kalle kuuli, että huoneessa siivot/tiin.**      **Kalle kuuli huoneessa siivot/ta/va/n.**

Kalle heard that *someone was cleaning* in the room/heard *someone cleaning*...

**Huomasin, että alakerrassa riidel/lään.**      **Huomasin alakerrassa riidel/tä/vä/n.**

I noticed that *there is quarrelling* downstairs.

**Tiedän, että ol/laan sitä mieltä että...**      **Tiedän ol/ta/va/n sitä mieltä, että...**

I know that *people are* of the opinion that...

**Tiedän, että Virossa on puhu/ttu myös ruotsia.**      **Tiedän Virossa puhu/tu/n myös ruotsia.**

I know that in Estonia Swedish *has* also been spoken.

**Kuulin, että oli sano/ttu että...**      **Kuulin sano/tu/n, että...**

I heard that *it had been said* that...

**Huomasin, että oli esite/tty että...**      **Huomasin esite/ty/n, että...**

I noticed that *it had been proposed* that...

**Kalle kertoi, että oli rakenne/ttu talo.**      **Kalle kertoi rakenne/tu/n talo.**

Kalle said that a house *had been built*.

**Kalle kertoi, että talo oli rakenne/ttu.**      **Kalle kertoi talo/n rakenne/tu/n.**

Kalle said that the house *had been built*.

Note that in the last example above the fact that the object of the passive sentence is definite can be indicated by moving the object before the participle (i.e. to the beginning of its clause) and inflecting it in the genitive.

## §83 THE TEMPORAL CONSTRUCTION

The temporal construction can be used to contract a **kun** ('when') clause. If the action of the **kun** clause is simultaneous with or later than that of the main clause, the form of the verb is the second infinitive inessive, e.g. **sano/e/ssa/ni** 'when I say' (cf. §75.1).

*Kun clause*

**Kun Kalle tuli, Pekka lähti.**

*When Kalle came Pekka left.*

*Temporal construction*

**Kalle/n tul/le/ssa Pekka lähti.**



**Kun tulin, kompastuin.***As I came I stumbled.***Tul/le/ssa/ni kompastuin.**

If the action of the **kun** clause is earlier than that of the main clause, the verb form in the temporal construction is the past participle passive inflected in the partitive, e.g. **sano/ttu/a** ‘having said’, **syö/ty/ä** ‘having eaten’ (cf. §71). The participle does not carry its normal passive meaning here.

**Kun Kalle oli tullut, Pekka lähti. Kalle/n tul/tu/a Pekka lähti.***When Kalle had come/Kalle having come, Pekka left.***Kun olin tullut, kompastuin.***When I had come I stumbled.***Tul/tu/a/ni kompastuin.**

The table below is a reminder of the formation of the past participle passive.

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Past tense</i>	<i>Past participle</i>	<i>Partitive case</i>
		<i>passive</i>	<i>passive</i>	
<b>sano/a</b>	say	sano/ttiin	sano/ttu	sano/ <b>ttu/a</b>
<b>anta/a</b>	give	anne/ttiin	anne/ttu	anne/ <b>ttu/a</b>
<b>juo/da</b>	drink	juo/tiin	juo/tu	juo/ <b>tu/a</b>
<b>ol/la</b>	be	ol/tiin	ol/tu	ol/ <b>tu/a</b>
<b>huomat/a</b>	notice	huomat/tiin	huomat/tu	huomat/ <b>tu/a</b>
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	pelät/tiin	pelät/ty	pelät/ <b>ty/ä</b>
<b>ansait/a</b>	earn	ansait/tiin	ansait/tu	ansait/ <b>tu/a</b>

The subject of the **kun** clause is indicated in the temporal construction according to the same rules as for the second infinitive inessive (§75.1).

The subject is expressed

- by a possessive suffix alone, if the subject is identical with that of the main clause;
- by an independent word in the genitive, if the subject is different from that of the main clause;
- by the genitive forms of personal pronouns (**minun**, etc.), always followed by a possessive suffix on the participle (unstressed first and second personal pronouns may be omitted).

**Kun** clause

**Kun Pekka oli herännyt, hän lähti töihin.**

When *Pekka* had woken up *he* went off to work.

*Past participle passive, partitive*

**Herät/ty/ä/än Pekka lähti töihin.**

**Kun oli/n herännyt, lähti/n töihin. Herät/ty/ä/ni lähdin töihin.**

When *I* had woken up *I* went off to work.

**Tule/t/ko ulos, kun ole/t juonut kahvia? Tuletko ulos juo/tu/a/si kahvia?**

Will *you* come out when *you* have had some coffee?

**Kun oli/mme syöneet, lähdi/mme kävelylle. Syö/ty/ä/mme lähdimme kävelylle.**

When *we* had eaten *we* went for a walk.

**Monet ihmiset ajattelevat paremmin, kun he ovat juoneet kahvia. Monet ihmiset ajattelevat paremmin juo/tu/a/an kahvia.**

*Many people* think better when *they* have had some coffee.

**Kun Pekka oli herännyt, Liisa lähti töihin. Peka/n herät/ty/ä Liisa lähti töihin.**

When *Pekka* had woken up *Liisa* went off to work.

**Kun Viren oli tullut maaliin, Päivärinta oli vielä loppusuoralla. Vireni/n tul/tu/a maaliin Päivärinta oli vielä loppusuoralla.**

When *Viren* had arrived at the finish *Päivärinta* was still on the final straight.

**Kaikki hämmästyivät, kun Lipponen oli sanonut tämän. Kaikki hämmästyivät Lippose/n sano/ttu/a tämän.**

*Everyone* was surprised when *Lipponen* had said this.

**Vaimoni heräsi, kun (minä) olin tullut kotiin. Vaimoni heräsi (minun) tul/tu/a/ni kotiin.**

*My wife* woke up when *I* had come home.

**Kun oli/mme olleet vuoden Ruotsissa, ajat huononivat. (Meidän) ol/tu/a/mme vuoden Ruotsissa ajat huononivat.**

When *we* had been a year in Sweden *times* got worse.

## §84 THE AGENT CONSTRUCTION

The agent construction is a way of contracting relative clauses, i.e. those beginning with **joka, mikä** ‘who, which’; in most cases these clauses then become premodifiers, with the verb functioning as an adjective and the subject (the agent) appearing e.g. in the genitive.

*Relative clause*  
**auto, jonka Kalle osti**  
 the car that Kalle bought

*Agent construction*  
**Kalle/n osta/ma auto**  
 the car bought by Kalle

**auto, jonka (minä) ostin**  
the car that I bought

**(minu/n) osta/ma/ni auto**  
the car bought by me

The following rule applies to the verb of the agent construction.

The verb of the agent construction

- (a) usually indicates past time;
- (b) is formed from the ending **-ma ~ -mä**, added to the inflectional stem (§76.1);
- (c) functions like a normal adjective, inflecting for number and all cases (§31).

Point (a) of the rule means that the verb of the construction may correspond to any of the tenses indicating past time (past tense, perfect, pluperfect).

**Kalle/n osta/ma auto**

- (a) the car which Kalle *bought*
- (b) the car which Kalle *has bought*
- (c) the car which Kalle *had bought*

Point (b) means that the verb is formed in the same way as the stem of the third infinitive (cf. §76.1).

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Third person singular</i>	<i>Verb form in -ma ~ -mä</i>
<b>anta/a</b>	give	anta/a	anta/ <b>ma</b>
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	vetä/ä	vetä/ <b>mä</b>
<b>kaivat/a</b>	long for	kaipaa	kaipaa/ <b>ma</b>
<b>määrät/ä</b>	order	määrää	määrää/ <b>mä</b>
<b>syö/dä</b>	eat	syö	syö/ <b>mä</b>
<b>valit/a</b>	choose	valitse/e	valitse/ <b>ma</b>
<b>mainit/a</b>	mention	mainitse/e	mainitse/ <b>ma</b>

Point (c) means that the forms in **-ma ~ -mä** behave in the sentence like adjectives and are subject to the rules of concord (§31).

**sininen auto**

the *blue* car

**Kallen osta/ma auto**

the car Kalle *bought*

**sinise/n auto/n**

of the *blue* car

**Kallen osta/ma/n auto/n**

of the car Kalle *bought*

**sinise/ssä auto/ssa**

in the *blue* car

**Kallen osta/ma/ssa auto/ssa**

in the car Kalle *bought*

<i>sinise/t auto/t</i>	the <i>blue</i> cars
<b>Kallen osta/ma/t auto/t</b>	the cars Kalle <i>bought</i>
<i>sinis/i/llä auto/i/lla</i>	with the <i>blue</i> cars
<b>Kallen osta/m/i/lla auto/i/lla</b>	with the cars Kalle <i>bought</i>

The agent in this construction corresponds to the subject of the relative clause (i.e. **Kalle** in the examples above), and is expressed according to the same rules that apply to the subject in the temporal construction (§83).

The agent is expressed:

- (a) by a possessive suffix alone, if it is the same as the corresponding constituent in the main clause (generally the subject);
- (b) by an independent word in the genitive, if it is different from the corresponding constituent in the main clause;
- (c) by the genitive forms of personal pronouns (**minun**, etc.), always followed by a possessive suffix (unstressed first and second personal pronouns may be omitted).

**Tuula/n hankki/ma vene maksoi 1 000 mk.**

The boat *Tuula got* cost 1,000 marks.

**(Minun) hankki/ma/ni vene maksoi 1 000 mk.**

The boat *I got* cost 1,000 marks.

**Tuula istuu hankki/ma/ssa/an veneessä.**

Tuula is sitting in the boat *she got*.

**Istun hankki/ma/ssa/ni veneessä.**

I am sitting in the boat *I got*.

**Miksi ette aja hankki/ma/lla/nne veneellä?**

Why don't you go ('drive') in the boat *you got*?

**Hankki/ma/mme veneet eivät maksaneet paljon.**

The boats *we got* didn't cost much.

**Poik/i/en hankki/ma/t veneet ovat mukavia.**

The boats *the boys got* are nice.

**Hän ajaa Tuula/n hankki/ma/lla veneellä.**

He is going in the boat *Tuula got*.

Particular attention should be paid to expressions such as the following, where the agent construction does not correspond directly to a relative clause.

**Ehdotus on Virtase/n esittä/mä.**

The proposal was *put forward* by Virtanen.

**Tämä runo on Saarikoske/n kirjoitta/ma.**

This poem was *written* by Saarikoski.

**Nämä runot ovat Saarikoske/n kirjoitta/ma/t ~ kirjoitta/m/i/a.**

These poems were *written* by Saarikoski.

**Kene/n kirjoitta/m/i/a nämä runot ovat?**

*By whom* were these poems *written*?

# 19 COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

- *Comparative*
- *Superlative*

## §85 COMPARATIVE

The comparative ending is **-mpi**, which is added to the inflectional stem (see Chapter 5), e.g. **hullu** ‘mad’: **hullu/mpi** ‘madder’. The following sound change occurs before the comparative ending:

The short **-a ~ -ä** of disyllabic adjectives changes to **-e** before the comparative ending.

Cf. **vahva** ‘strong’: **vahve/mpi** ‘stronger’; **selvä** ‘clear’: **selve/mpi** ‘clearer’. The rules of consonant gradation also apply before the comparative ending (§15.6), cf. **helppo** ‘easy’: **helpe/mpi** ‘easier’.

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Inflectional stem §</i>
<b>paksu</b>	thick	<b>paksu/mpi</b> thicker	–
<b>iso</b>	big	<b>iso/mpi</b>	–
<b>kiltti</b>	good-natured	<b>kiltti/mpi</b>	–
<b>vanha</b>	old	<b>vanhe/mpi</b>	–
<b>selvä</b>	clear	<b>selve/mpi</b>	–
<b>kova</b>	hard	<b>kove/mpi</b>	–
<b>paha</b>	bad	<b>pahe/mpi</b>	–
<b>jyrkkä</b>	steep	<b>jyrke/mpi</b>	–
<b>tarkka</b>	exact	<b>tarke/mpi</b>	–
<b>nopea</b>	fast	<b>nopea/mpi</b>	–
<b>vakava</b>	serious	<b>vakava/mpi</b>	–
<b>suuri</b>	great	<b>suure/mpi</b>	18.3 (suure-)
<b>pieni</b>	small	<b>piene/mpi</b>	18.3 (piene-)
<b>uusi</b>	new	<b>uude/mpi</b>	18.4 (uute-)
<b>terve</b>	healthy	<b>tervee/mpi</b>	19 (tervee-)
<b>tuore</b>	fresh	<b>tuoree/mpi</b>	19 (tuoree-)
<b>tavallinen</b>	usual	<b>tavallise/mpi</b>	20.1 (tavallise-)

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Inflectional stem §</i>
<b>punainen</b>	red	<b>punaise/mpi</b>	20.1 (punaise-)
<b>kaunis</b>	beautiful	<b>kaunii/mpi</b>	20.3 (kaunii-)
<b>puhdas</b>	clean	<b>puhtaa/mpi</b>	20.3 (puhtaa-)
<b>raitis</b>	sober	<b>raittii/mpi</b>	20.3 (raittii-)
<b>voimakas</b>	powerful	<b>voimakkaa/mpi</b>	20.3 (voimakkaa-)
<b>lyhyt</b>	short	<b>lyhye/mpi</b>	20.8 (lyhye-)
<b>kevyt</b>	light	<b>kevye/mpi</b>	20.8 (kevye-)

The declension of the comparative forms has one special feature. In the inflectional stem the final part **-mpi** changes to **-mpa-** ~ **-mpä-**, and the consonant gradation rules then change this to **-mma-** ~ **-mmä-**. Before the plural **-i-** the final **-a** ~ **-ä** of these endings is dropped (cf. §16).

<i>Comparative basic form</i>		<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<b>paksu/mpi</b>	thicker	<i>Illat.</i> paksu/ <b>mpa</b> /an	paksu/ <b>mp</b> /i/in
		<i>Ess.</i> paksu/ <b>mpa</b> /na	paksu/ <b>mp</b> /i/na
		<i>Part.</i> paksu/ <b>mpa</b> /a	paksu/ <b>mp</b> /i/a
		<i>Gen.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /n	paksu/ <b>mp</b> /i/en
		<i>Iness.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /ssa	paksu/ <b>mm</b> /i/ssa
		<i>Elat.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /sta	paksu/ <b>mm</b> /i/sta
		<i>Adess.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /lla	paksu/ <b>mm</b> /i/lla
		<i>Ablat.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /lta	paksu/ <b>mm</b> /i/lta
		<i>Allat.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /lle	paksu/ <b>mm</b> /i/lle
		<i>Transl.</i> paksu/ <b>mma</b> /ksi	paksu/ <b>mm</b> /i/ksi

Similarly, the comparative basic form **selve/mpi** ‘clearer’ declines as follows: **selve/mpä/än** (illative), **selve/mmä/n** (genitive), **selve/mm/i/ssä** (inessive plural), etc.

The comparative forms of the adjectives **hyvä** ‘good’ and **pitkä** ‘long’ are exceptional: **hyvä** : **pare/mpi** ‘better’, and **pitkä** : **pite/mpi** ‘longer’. **Pare/mpi** inflects e.g. **pare/mpa/an** (illative), **pare/mma/ssa** (inessive) and **pare/mm/i/lla** (adessive plural).

In context the comparative forms often co-occur with the word **kuin** ‘than’; otherwise they behave like ordinary adjectives.

**Minun autoni on iso/mpi kuin sinun.**

My car is *bigger* than yours.

**Ostan iso/mma/n auton.**

I’ll buy a *bigger* car.

**Ei iso/mma/lla autolla mitään tee!**

One can’t do anything with a *bigger* car!

**Sinä olet *nuore/mpi* kuin minä.**

You are *younger* than me.

**Mutta minä taas olen *vanhe/mpi* kuin Lauri.**

But on the other hand I am *older* than Lauri.

**Suomessa on monta *suure/mpa/a* kaupunkia kuin Salo.**

In Finland there are many *bigger* towns than Salo.

**Uskomme *pare/mpa/an* tulevaisuuteen.**

We believe in a *better* future.

**Näytät *tervee/mmä/ltä* kuin eilen.**

You look *healthier* than yesterday.

**Olenkin *tervee/mpi*!**

I am *healthier*!

**Pitäisi elää *tervee/mpä/ä* elämää.**

One ought to lead a *healthier* life.

**Pekka hankki *pare/mma/n* asunnon.**

Pekka got a *better* flat.

**Etkö pysty hankkimaan *pare/mpa/a* asuntoa?**

Can't you get a *better* flat?

**Kaupunki rakentaa *pare/mp/i/a* asuntoja.**

The town is building *better* flats.

**Appelsiinit ovat *kalli/mp/i/a* kuin omenat.**

Oranges are *more expensive* than apples.

***Keltaise/mma/t* appelsiinit ovat *kypse/mp/i/ä*.**

The *yellower* oranges are *riper*.

**Ostan nuo *keltaise/mma/t* appelsiinit.**

I'll buy those *yellower* oranges.

**En osta noita *vihreä/mp/i/ä* appelsiineja.**

I shan't buy those *greener* oranges.

**Tämä on *lue/tu/mpi* kirja.**

This book is *more* (widely) *read*.

The structure **kuin**+nominative can sometimes be replaced by a word in the partitive alone, placed before the comparative form. This structure is used mainly in the written language.

**Olet *vanhe/mpi* kuin minä. = Olet minu/a *vanhe/mpi*.**

You are *older* than me.



**Tämä auto on kallii/mpi kuin tuo. = Tämä auto on tuo/ta kallii/mpi.**  
 This car is *more expensive* than that one.

## §86 SUPERLATIVE

The superlative ending is **-in**; like the comparative ending, it is added to the inflectional stem, e.g. **hullu** ‘mad’ : **hullu/in** ‘maddest’. Consonant gradation occurs before the superlative ending (§15.6), e.g. **helppo** ‘easy’ : **helpo/in** ‘easiest’.

Before the superlative ending the vowel change rules also apply (§16): a long vowel shortens, short **-a**, **-ä** and **-e** are dropped, and **-i** and **-ii** change to **-e**.

Examples:

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Superlative</i>	<i>Inflectional stem</i>	<i>§</i>
<b>paksu</b>	thick	<b>paksu/in</b>	–
<b>iso</b>	big	<b>iso/in</b>	–
<b>kiltti</b>	good-natured	<b>kilte/in</b>	–
<b>vanha</b>	old	<b>vanh/in</b>	–
<b>selvä</b>	clear	<b>selv/in</b>	–
<b>kova</b>	hard	<b>kov/in</b>	–
<b>jyrkkä</b>	steep	<b>jyrk/in</b>	–
<b>tarkka</b>	exact	<b>tark/in</b>	–
<b>nopea</b>	fast	<b>nope/in</b>	–
<b>tärkeä</b>	important	<b>tärke/in</b>	–
<b>matala</b>	low	<b>matal/in</b>	–
<b>suuri</b>	great	<b>suur/in</b>	18.3 (suure-)
<b>pieni</b>	small	<b>pien/in</b>	18.3 (piene-)
<b>uusi</b>	new	<b>uus/in</b>	18.4 (uute-)
<b>tavallinen</b>	usual	<b>tavallis/in</b>	20.1 (tavallise-)
<b>punainen</b>	red	<b>punais/in</b>	20.1 (punaise-)
<b>kaunis</b>	beautiful	<b>kaune/in</b>	20.3 (kaunij-)
<b>raitis</b>	sober	<b>raitte/in</b>	20.3 (raittij-)
<b>vapaa</b>	free	<b>vapa/in</b>	–
<b>vakaa</b>	firm	<b>vaka/in</b>	–
<b>terve</b>	healthy	<b>terve/in</b>	19 (tervee-)
<b>tuore</b>	fresh	<b>tuore/in</b>	19 (tuoree-)
<b>puhdas</b>	clean	<b>puhta/in</b>	20.3 (puhtaa-)
<b>voimakas</b>	powerful	<b>voimakka/in</b>	20.3 (voimakkaa-)
<b>runsa</b>	abundant	<b>runsa/in</b>	20.3 (runsaa-)

<i>Basic form</i>		<i>Superlative</i>	<i>Inflectional stem §</i>
<b>lyhyt</b>	short	<b>lyh(y)<u>in</u></b>	20.8 (lyhy <u>e</u> -)
<b>ohut</b>	thin	<b>ohu<u>in</u></b>	20.8 (ohu <u>e</u> -)

The superlative forms also have an unusual declension, which partly resembles that of the comparative (§85). In the inflectional stem **-in** changes to **-impa-** ~ **-impä-**, which after consonant gradation becomes **-imma-** ~ **-inunä-**. Before the plural **-i-** the final **-a** ~ **-ä** is dropped.

<i>Superlative basic form</i>		<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<b>paksu<u>in</u></b>	thickest	<i>Illat.</i> <b>paksu/<u>impa</u>/<u>an</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imp</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>in</u></b>
		<i>Ess.</i> <b>paksu/<u>impa</u>/<u>na</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imp</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>na</u></b>
		<i>Part.</i> <b>paksu/<u>impa</u>/<u>a</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imp</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>a</u></b>
		<i>Gen.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>n</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>en</u></b>
		<i>Iness.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>ssa</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>ssa</u></b>
		<i>Elat.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>sta</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>sta</u></b>
		<i>Adess.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>lla</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>lla</u></b>
		<i>Ablat.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>lta</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>lta</u></b>
		<i>Allat.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>lle</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>lle</u></b>
		<i>Transl.</i> <b>paksu/<u>imma</u>/<u>ksi</u></b>	<b>paksu/<u>imm</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>ksi</u></b>

In the same way, the adjective **selvä** ‘clear’ has the superlative basic form **selvin** ‘clearest’, and declines as, for example, **selv/impä/än** (illative), **selv/immä/stä** (elative), **selv/imp/i/in** (illative plural) and **selv/imm/i/llä** (adessive plural).

The partitive singular is normally formed directly from the basic form, by adding the ending **-ta** ~ **-tä**, e.g. **paksu/in/ta**, **selv/in/tä**, **vanh/in/ta** and **voimakka/in/ta**. The superlatives of **hyvä** and **pitkä** are exceptional.

<i>Basic form</i>	<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Superlative</i>	
<b>hyvä</b>	<b>pare/<u>mpi</u></b>	<b>paras</b> ~ <b>parha/<u>in</u></b>	(gen. <b>parhaa/<u>n</u></b> ~ <b>parha/<u>imma</u>/<u>n</u></b> ,
good	better	best	illat. <b>parha/<u>impa</u>/<u>an</u></b> ,
			illat. pl. <b>parha/<u>imp</u>/<u>i</u>/<u>in</u></b> )
<b>pitkä</b>	<b>pite/<u>mpi</u></b>	<b>pis/<u>in</u></b>	(gen. <b>pis/<u>immä</u>/<u>n</u></b> )
long	longer	longest	

The partitive singular forms here are **paras/ta** or **parha/in/ta**, and **pis/in/tä**, respectively.

In context the superlative forms function like ordinary adjectives.

### **Helsinki on Suomen suur/in kaupunki.**

Helsinki is Finland’s *biggest* town.

### **Oletko käynyt Suomen suur/imma/ssa kaupungissa?**

Have you been to Finland’s *biggest* town?

**Helsinki on kehittynyt Suomen suur/imma/ksi kaupungiksi.**

Helsinki has developed into Finland's *biggest* town.

**Mikä on Suomen vanh/in kaupunki?**

Which is Finland's *oldest* town?

**Rauma kuuluu Suomen vanh/imp/i/in kaupunkeihin.**

Rauma is one of Finland's *oldest* towns.

**Asun kaupungin vanh/imma/ssa osassa.**

I live in the *oldest* part of the town.

**Aion muuttaa kaupungin vanh/imp/a/an osaan.**

I'll move to the *oldest* part of the town.

**Mitkä ovat kirjan vaike/imma/t luvut?**

Which are the *most difficult* chapters of the book?

**Viren oli kaikkein nope/in, Virtanen taas hita/in.**

Viren was the *fastest* of all, and Virtanen the *slowest*.

**Kuka pojista on pisin?**

Which of the boys is the *tallest*?

**Suomi on yksi maailman pohjois/imm/i/sta maista.**

Finland is one of the *northernmost* countries in the world.

**Suomi on maailman pohjois/imp/i/a maita.**

Finland is one of the *northernmost* countries in the world.

**Viren on Suomen nope/imp/i/a juoksijoita.**

Viren is one of Finland's *fastest* runners.

**Annan parhaa/n (parhaimma/n) palan sinulle.**

I'll give the *best* bit to you.

**Liha maistuu parhaa/lta (parhaimma/lta) paistettuna.**

Meat tastes *best* when it is roasted.

**Kalle on parha/i/ta ystäviäni.**

Kalle is one of my *best* friends.

**On halv/in/ta syödä puuroa.**

It is *cheapest* to eat porridge.

**Ostan halv/imma/t kengät.**

I'll buy the *cheapest* shoes.

**Onko Juhannustanssit Suomen luetu/in kirja?**

Is Midsummer Dance the *most* (widely) *read* book in Finland?

**Heikki Kinnunen on Suomen pidety/imp/i/ä näyttelijöitä.**

Heikki Kinnunen is one of Finland's *most popular* actors.

The structure for the absolute superlative (meaning 'most X' or 'very X') is **mitä**+superlative, e.g. **mitä hullu/in** 'very mad'.

**Ehdotus on mitä parhain.**

The proposal is *extremely good*.

**Näytät mitä terve/immä/ttä.**

You look *most healthy*.

**Hän teki mitä syv/immä/n  
vaikutuksen kuulijoihin.**

He/she exerted a *most profound*  
impression on the listeners.

## 20 OTHER WORD CLASSES

- *Adverbs*
- *Prepositions*
- *Postpositions*
- *Conjunctions*
- *Particles*

### §87 ADVERBS

The most common type of adverb expresses manner, and is formed by adding the ending **-sti** to the inflectional stem of an adjective, e.g. **hauska** ‘nice’ : **hauska/sti** ‘nicely’. This ending causes consonant gradation, e.g. **helppo** ‘easy’ : **helppo/sti** ‘easily’ (§15.6).

*Basic form*

**paksu**

**kiltti**

**nopea**

**suuri**

**tavallinen**

**kaunis**

**puhdas**

**voimakas**

*Adverb in -sti*

**paksu/sti**

**kiltti/sti**

**nopea/sti**

**suure/sti**

**tavallise/sti**

**kaunii/sti**

**puhtaa/sti**

**voimakkaa/sti**

thickly

good-naturedly

fast

greatly

usually

beautifully

purely

powerfully

**Jussi laulaa kaunii/sti.**

**Panen runsaa/sti voita leivän päälle.**

**Puhukaa aivan vapaa/sti!**

**Nyt täytyy puhua lyhye/sti.**

**Tavallise/sti menen sänkyyn klo 23.**

**Teen työtä tehokkaa/sti.**

**En pidä tästä erityise/sti.**

Jussi sings *beautifully*.

I put plenty of (‘abundantly’) butter on the bread.

Speak quite *freely*!

Now one must speak *briefly*.

*Usually* I go to bed at 11 o’clock.

I work *efficiently*.

I don’t *particularly* like this.

The corresponding comparative and superlative expressions are derived by changing the endings **-mpi** and **-in** to **-mmin** (comparative) and **-immin** (superlative).

<i>Adjective</i>		<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Superlative</i>	<i>Comparative</i>	<i>Superlative</i>
<i>basic</i>		<i>adjective</i>	<i>adjective</i>	<i>adverb</i>	<i>adverb</i>
<i>form</i>		<i>basic form</i>	<i>basic form</i>	<i>in -mmin</i>	<i>in -immin</i>
<b>helppo</b>	easy	helpo/mpi	helpo/in	helpo/mmin	helpo/immin
<b>selvä</b>	clear	selve/mpi	selv/in	selve/mmin	selv/immin
<b>kova</b>	hard	kove/mpi	kov/in	kove/mmin	kov/immin
<b>matala</b>	low	matala/mpi	matal/in	matala/mmin	matal/immin
<b>tarkka</b>	exact	tarke/mpi	tark/in	tarke/mmin	tark/immin
<b>suuri</b>	great	suure/mpi	suur/in	suure/mmin	suur/immin
<b>tavallinen</b>	usual	tavallise/mpi	tavallis/in	tavallise/mmin	tavallis/immin
<b>kaunis</b>	beautiful	kaunii/mpi	kaune/in	kaunii/mmin	kaune/immin
<b>puhdas</b>	clean	puhtaa/mpi	puhta/in	puhtaa/mmin	puhta/immin
<b>runsas</b>	abundant	runsaa/mpi	runsa/in	runsaa/mmin	runsa/immin
<b>terve</b>	healthy	tervee/mpi	terve/in	tervee/mmin	terve/immin

**Yrjö juoksee nopea/mmin kuin Lauri.**

Yrjö runs *faster* than Lauri.

**Aja hitaa/mmin!**

Drive *more slowly*!

**Tuo mies ajaa kaikkein hita/immin.**

That man drives *the slowest* of all.

**Yritä opiskella ahkera/mmin.**

Try to study *more diligently*.

**Bill ääntää selv/immin.**

Bill pronounces *the most clearly*.

**Tavallis/immin herään klo 7.**

*Most commonly* I wake at 7 o'clock.

**Elä tervee/mmin!**

Live *more healthily*!

**Siellä oli runsaa/mmin ihmisiä kuin oli odotettu.**

There were *more* people there than had been expected.

**Kyllä Johanna laulaa kaune/immin, ainakin kaunii/mmin kuin Aune.**

Johanna certainly sings *the most beautifully*, at least *more beautifully* than Aune.

The comparative and superlative of **paljon** 'much, many' are exceptional: **enemmän** 'more' and **eniten** 'most'.

Another common group of adverbs are those expressing place or direction, such as **alas** 'down', **pois** 'away'. These adverbs often inflect in the three external locative cases (§40) in accordance with the direction of the action of the verb.

<b>alas</b>	down
<b>alhaa/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	down, below
<b>ede/ssä, -stä, eteen</b>	in front, before
<b>kaikkia/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	everywhere
<b>kaukana, kaukaa, kauas</b>	far
<b>kotona, kotoa, kotiin</b>	at home
<b>oikea/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	on the right
<b>poissa, pois</b>	away
<b>sie/llä, -ltä, sinne</b>	there (unspecified place)
<b>tuo/lla, -lta, -nne</b>	there (place pointed to)
<b>tää/llä, -ltä, tänne</b>	here
<b>ulkona, ulkoa, ulos</b>	outside
<b>vasemma/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	on the left
<b>ylös</b>	up

Many common adverbs indicate time.

<b>aikaisin</b>	early	<b>joskus</b>	sometimes
<b>aina</b>	always	<b>kauan</b>	for a long time
<b>eilen</b>	yesterday	<b>kerran</b>	once
<b>ennen</b>	before	<b>kohta</b>	soon
<b>harvoin</b>	rarely	<b>myöhään</b>	late
<b>heti</b>	immediately	<b>nyt</b>	now
<b>huomenna</b>	tomorrow	<b>silloin</b>	then, at that time
<b>tänään</b>	today	<b>sitten</b>	then, after that
<b>usein</b>	often		

Another major group are those of degree, measure or quantity.

<b>aika</b>	quite, rather	<b>kovin</b>	very
<b>aivan</b>	quite, completely	<b>kyllin</b>	enough
<b>erittäin</b>	extremely	<b>liian</b>	too
<b>hieman</b>	slightly	<b>melko</b>	quite, considerably
<b>hiukan</b>	a little	<b>niin</b>	so
<b>varsin</b>	exceedingly, quite		

In addition to those mentioned above there are also other adverbs of manner.

<b>hiljaa</b>	quiet(ly)	<b>näin</b>	in this way
<b>hyvin</b>	well	<b>oikein</b>	right
<b>ilmaiseksi</b>	free of charge	<b>samoin</b>	in the same way
<b>itsestään</b>	of itself	<b>siten</b>	in that way
<b>mielellään</b>	with pleasure	<b>yksin</b>	alone

Also important are the modal adverbs, which indicate in a variety of subjective ways the speaker's attitude to what he or she is saying.

<b>ainakin</b>	at least	<b>muun muassa</b>	among other things
<b>ehkä</b>	perhaps	<b>myös</b>	also
<b>jopa</b>	even	<b>päinvastoin</b>	on the contrary
<b>juuri</b>	just	<b>tietenkin</b>	of course
<b>kai</b>	probably	<b>tietysti</b>	of course
<b>kenties</b>	perhaps	<b>tosin</b>	to be sure
<b>kyllä</b>	certainly, indeed; yes	<b>tosiaan</b>	really
<b>mieluummin</b>	rather	<b>vain</b>	only

## §88 PREPOSITIONS

Prepositions and postpositions (§89) take either the genitive or the partitive. There are many more postpositions than prepositions in Finnish.

Prepositions precede the words whose case they determine, e.g. **ilman** ‘without’ (**ilman raha/a** ‘without money’). The following prepositions take the partitive case:

<b>ennen</b>	before	<b>lähe/llä, -ltä, -lle</b>	near
<b>ilman</b>	without	<b>paitsi</b>	besides; except
<b>keske/llä, -ltä, -lle</b>	in the middle of	<b>pitkin</b>	along
<b>kohti</b>	towards	<b>päin</b>	towards
<b>vasten</b>	against		

**ennen tois/ta maailmansota/a**  
**Oletko ilman raha/a?**

*before* the Second World War  
Don't you have any money? ('Are you *without* money?')

**Koira makaa keskellä lattia/a.**

The dog lies *in the middle of* the floor.

**Ajan kohti Kuopio/ta.**

I drive *towards* Kuopio.

**Paitsi viini/ä tarvitsemme oluttakin.**

*Besides* wine we need beer, too.

**Varas juoksi pitkin Eerikinkatu/a.**

The thief ran *along* Eric's Street.

**Kaikki menee päin helvetti/ä.**

Everything is going bloody badly ('to hell').

**Nojasin vasten seinä/ä.**

I leaned *against* the wall.

The following prepositions take the genitive case; there are not many of these.

<b>alle</b>	under (not in locative sense)	<b>läpi</b>	through (temporal)
<b>halki</b>	through (locative)	<b>sitten</b>	since
<b>kautta</b>	throughout		
<b>kesken</b>	in the middle of (temporal sense)		



**Mies painaa *alle* sadan kilon.**

**Kuljen *halki* metsän.**

**Hänet tunnetaan *kautta* maan.**

***Kesken* tunnin Pekka lähti ulos.**

***läpi* vuotisatoj/en**

***Sitten* viime syksyn en ole**

**käynyt ulkomailla.**

The man weighs *under* 100 kilos.

I walk *through* the wood.

He/she is known *throughout* the country.

*In the middle of* the lesson Pekka went out.

*through* the centuries

*Since* last autumn I have not been abroad.

## §89 POSTPOSITIONS

Postpositions occur after the words whose case they determine, e.g. **yli** ‘over, across’ (**kadu**/n **yli** ‘across the street’). Postpositions taking the genitive case are very common, and the most important ones are given in the list below. Some of them inflect in three local cases.

<b>aikana</b>	during
<b>alitse</b>	below
<b>a/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	under (place)
<b>ansiosta</b>	thanks to
<b>ede/llä, -ltä, -lle</b>	in front of
<b>ede/ssä, -stä, eteen</b>	in front of
<b>eduksi</b>	to the advantage of
<b>halki</b>	through
<b>hallu/ssa, -sta, haltuun</b>	in the possession of
<b>hyväksi</b>	for (the benefit of)
<b>johdosta</b>	because of
<b>jäljessä</b>	after, behind
<b>jälkeen</b>	after, behind
<b>kanssa</b>	with
<b>kautta</b>	by means of, via
<b>keskellä</b>	in the middle of
<b>kesken</b>	between, among
<b>keskuude/ssa, -sta, keskuuteen</b>	among
<b>kohda/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	at, at the point of
<b>luo(kse/en)</b>	to
<b>luona</b>	near, at the house of
<b>luota</b>	from
<b>lähe/llä, -ltä, -lle</b>	near
<b>läpi</b>	through
<b>lävitse</b>	through
<b>mielestä</b>	in the opinion of
<b>mukaan</b>	according to

<b>mukana</b>	with
<b>ohi</b>	past
<b>ohitse</b>	past
<b>osalta</b>	as regards
<b>perusteella</b>	on the basis of
<b>perässä</b>	behind, after
<b>poikki</b>	across
<b>puole/lla, -lta, -lle</b>	on the side of
<b>puolesta</b>	on behalf of
<b>pää/llä, -ltä, -lle</b>	on (top of)
<b>päässä</b>	at a distance of
<b>rinnalla</b>	at the side of
<b>sisällä</b>	in, inside
<b>sisään</b>	in, into
<b>taakse</b>	behind (direction towards)
<b>takaa</b>	from behind
<b>takana</b>	behind, at the back of
<b>takia</b>	for the sake of, because of
<b>tähden</b>	for the sake of, because of
<b>viere/llä, -ltä, -lle</b>	beside
<b>viere/ssä, -stä, -en</b>	beside
<b>vuoksi</b>	for the sake of, because of
<b>yli</b>	over, across
<b>ylitse</b>	over, across
<b>ympäri, -llä, -lle</b>	around
<b>Soda<u>n</u> aikana Ryti oli presidenttinä.</b>	<i>During</i> the war Ryti was president.
<b>Koira on pöydä<u>n</u> alla.</b>	The dog is <i>under</i> the table.
<b>Koira ryömi pöydä<u>n</u> alle.</b>	The dog crawled <i>under</i> the table.
<b>Tule esiin pöydä<u>n</u> alta!</b>	Come out <i>from under</i> the table!
<b>Sinu<u>n</u> ansiosta/si olen nyt täällä.</b>	<i>Thanks to</i> you I am here now.
<b>Talo<u>n</u> edessä on koivu.</b>	<i>In front of</i> the house is a birch tree.
<b>Pysäytän auton talo<u>n</u> eteen.</b>	I will park the car <i>in front of</i> the house.
<b>Ajammeko kaupungi<u>n</u> halki?</b>	Shall we drive <i>through</i> the town?
<b>Auto on Peka<u>n</u> hallussa.</b>	The car is <i>in</i> Pekka's <i>possession</i> .
<b>Auto joutui Peka<u>n</u> haltuun.</b>	The car fell <i>into</i> Pekka's <i>possession</i> .
<b>Auto on (minu<u>n</u>) hallussa/ni.</b>	The car is <i>in my</i> <i>possession</i> .
<b>Tee jotain Chile<u>n</u> hyväksi.</b>	Do something <i>for</i> Chile.
<b>Se<u>n</u> johdosta, että...</b>	<i>Because of</i> the fact that...
<b>Tunni<u>n</u> jälkeen menen kapakkaan.</b>	<i>After</i> the lesson I'm going to the pub.

<b>Menen tanssimaan Tuula/<u>n</u> kanssa.</b>	I'm going dancing <i>with</i> Tuula.
<b>Tuletko tanssimaan (minu/<u>n</u>) kanssa/ni?</b>	Will you come dancing <i>with</i> me?
<b>Salo/<u>n</u> kautta pääsee Hankoon.</b>	<i>Via</i> Salo one gets to Hanko.
<b>Näin meidä/<u>n</u> kesken...</b>	Just <i>between</i> ourselves...
<b>Tori on kaupungi/<u>n</u> keskellä.</b>	The market place is <i>in the centre of</i> the town.
<b>Ruotsalais/<u>ten</u> keskuudessa ollaan sitä mieltä, että...</b>	<i>Among</i> the Swedes there is ('one is of') the opinion that...
<b>Pekka on Tuula/<u>n</u> luona.</b>	Pekka is <i>at</i> Tuula's.
<b>Seija on meidä/<u>n</u> luona/mme.</b>	Seija is <i>at our place</i> .
<b>Tulen Elisa/<u>n</u> luota.</b>	I'm coming <i>from</i> Elisa's.
<b>Lähdetkö Merja/<u>n</u> luokse?</b>	Are you going <i>to</i> Merja's?
<b>Naantali on Turu/<u>n</u> lähellä.</b>	Naantali is <i>near</i> Turku.
<b>Aion muuttaa Salo/<u>n</u> lähelle.</b>	I intend to move <i>near</i> Salo.
<b>Aurinko paistaa ikkuna/<u>n</u> läpi.</b>	The sun shines <i>through</i> the window.
<b>Kalle/<u>n</u> mielestä tämä ei kannata.</b>	In Kalle's <i>opinion</i> this is not worth it.
<b>Ukkose/<u>n</u> mukana tuli sadetta.</b>	<i>With</i> the thunder came rain.
<b>Menen poik/i/<u>en</u> mukaan.</b>	I'm going <i>with</i> the boys.
<b>Ajoimme kaupa/<u>n</u> ohi.</b>	We drove <i>past</i> the shop.
<b>Tämä/<u>n</u> asia/<u>n</u> osalta olen eri mieltä.</b>	<i>As regards</i> this matter I am of a different opinion.
<b>Sanotu/<u>n</u> perusteella väitän, että...</b>	<i>On the basis of</i> what has been said I claim that...
<b>Koira juoksi tie/<u>n</u> poikki.</b>	The dog ran <i>across</i> the road.
<b>Kene/<u>n</u> puolella sinä olet?</b>	Whose <i>side</i> are you <i>on</i> ?
<b>Taistelemme isänmaa/<u>n</u> puolesta.</b>	We are fighting <i>for</i> the fatherland.
<b>Kukkulo/i/<u>den</u> päällä kasvoi metsää.</b>	<i>On top of</i> the hills there were woods ('there grew forest').
<b>Kilometri/<u>n</u> päässä on kioski.</b>	A kilometre <i>away</i> there is a kiosk.
<b>Talo/<u>n</u> sisällä oli lämmintä.</b>	<i>Inside</i> the house it was warm.
<b>Lapsi menee ove/<u>n</u> taakse.</b>	The child goes <i>behind</i> the door.
<b>Lapsi on ove/<u>n</u> takana.</b>	The child is <i>behind</i> the door.
<b>Lapsi tuli esille ove/<u>n</u> takaa.</b>	The child came out <i>from behind</i> the door.
<b>Häne/<u>n</u> takia/an teen mitä vain.</b>	<i>For his/her sake</i> I will do anything.
<b>Kirjasto on yliopisto/<u>n</u> vieressä.</b>	The library is <i>next to</i> the university.
<b>Saanko istua neidi/<u>n</u> viereen?</b>	May I sit <i>next to</i> you, Miss? ('next to Miss')
<b>Tällaise/<u>n</u> asia/<u>n</u> vuoksi ei pidä riidellä.</b>	One should not quarrel <i>because of</i> this sort of thing.
<b>Nyt mennään kadu/<u>n</u> yli.</b>	Now let's go <i>across</i> the street.
<b>Talo/<u>j</u>/<u>en</u> ympärillä oli metsää.</b>	<i>Around</i> the houses there was forest.

**Hän oli purjehtinut maailma/n ympäri.** He/she had sailed *round* the world.

When a postposition occurs with a personal pronoun in the genitive a possessive suffix must be added to the postposition, but first and second person pronouns themselves may be omitted (§36).

<b>(minu/n) kanssa/<u>ni</u></b>	with <i>me</i>
<b>(sinu/n) kanssa/<u>si</u></b>	with <i>you</i>
<b>häne/n kanssa/<u>an</u></b>	with <i>him/her</i>
<b>(me/i/dän) kanssa/<u>mme</u></b>	with <i>us</i> , etc.

The most common postpositions taking the partitive case are the following:

<b>alas</b>	down	<b>päin</b>	towards
<b>kohtaan</b>	towards, to (abstract)	<b>varten</b>	for
<b>kohti</b>	towards, to (concrete)	<b>vastaan</b>	against
<b>myöten</b>	along	<b>vastapäätä</b>	opposite
<b>pitkin</b>	along	<b>ylös</b>	up

**Johtaja on hyvin ystävällinen minu/a kohtaan.**

The manager is very friendly *to* me.

**Nyt lähdetään Turku/a kohti.**

Now let's go *towards* Turku.

**Hän kävelee katu/j/a myöten ~ pitkin.**

He walks *along* the streets.

**Sinu/a vartenhan se hankittiin.**

We got it *for* you.

**Leena tuli minu/a vastaan rautatieasemalle.**

Leena came to *meet* me at the railway station ('*against* me').

**Onko joku sinu/a vastassa?**

Is there anyone *meeting* you?

**Kirkko/a vastapäätä on Elanto.**

*Opposite* the church is the Elanto shop.

**Nyt täytyy kävellä mäke/a ylös.**

Now we have to walk *up* the hill.

The postpositions **asti** 'until, as far as' and **päin** 'towards' take the illative.

**Opetus jatkuu ilta/an asti.** The teaching continues *until* the evening.

**Juna kulkee Helsinki/in päin.** The train is going *towards* Helsinki.

## §90 CONJUNCTIONS

Conjunctions are words that link sentences and parts of sentences together, such as **ja** ‘and’, **kun** ‘when’. A list of the most common conjunctions follows below; the most common of all are marked with an arrow. Some are combinations of a conjunction and the negation verb, e.g. **etten=että en**, **ettet=että et**, **ettei=että ei**, and so on: i.e. they inflect for person.

<b>ei—eikä</b> (en—enkä, etc.)	neither—nor (inflects for person)
<b>eli</b>	or, i.e.
<b>ellei</b> (ellen, etc.)	if not, unless (inflects for person)
<b>ennen kuin</b>	before
<b>ettei</b> (etten, etc.)	that...not (inflects for person)
→ <b>että</b>	that
<b>ikään kuin</b>	as though
→ <b>ja</b>	and
<b>joko—tai</b>	either—or
<b>jollei</b> (jollen, etc.)	if not, unless (inflects for person)
→ <b>jos</b>	if
<b>joskin</b>	even if, even though
<b>jotta</b>	in order that, so that
→ <b>koska</b>	because, since
→ <b>kuin</b>	than
→ <b>kun</b>	when, as
<b>kunnes</b>	until
<b>kuten</b>	as, like
<b>mikäli</b>	as far as, in so far as; if
→ <b>mutta</b>	but
<b>muttei</b> (mutton, etc.)	but...not (inflects for person)
→ <b>niin</b>	so
<b>niin että</b>	so that
<b>niin kuin</b>	as, like
<b>niin—kuin -kin</b>	both—and
<b>niin pian kuin</b>	as soon as
<b>nimittäin</b>	namely, you see
<b>näet</b>	namely, you see
<b>paitsi</b>	except, besides
<b>paitsi—myös</b>	not only—but also
<b>samoin kuin</b>	in the same way as
<b>sekä</b>	and (more formal)
→ <b>sekä—että</b>	both—and
<b>sen tähden että</b>	because
→ <b>sillä</b>	for, because
→ <b>tai</b> (~ taikka)	or (not in questions, cf. <b>vai</b> )
<b>toisin kuin</b>	otherwise than

→ vaan	but (after a negative)
→ vai	or (in questions)
→ vaikka	although
<b>Pentti ja Pirkko olivat naimisissa.</b>	Pentti <i>and</i> Pirkko were married.
<b>Ei Pentti eikä Pirkko ole tullut vielä.</b>	<i>Neither</i> Pentti <i>nor</i> Pirkko have come yet.
<b>Ellet ole hiljaa, menen ulos.</b>	<i>Unless</i> you are quiet I shall go out.
<b>Ellemme yritä, emme onnistu.</b>	<i>If</i> we do <i>not</i> try we shall not succeed.
<b>Ellei sää parane, jäämme kotiin.</b>	<i>Unless</i> the weather improves we shall stay at home.
<b>Eniten eli 450 kappaletta myytiin autoja.</b>	The highest sales, <i>viz.</i> 450 units, were of cars.
<b>Kesti pitkään ennen kuin nukahdin.</b>	It took a long time <i>before</i> I fell asleep.
<b>Ei kestänyt kauan ennen kuin sää kirkastui.</b>	It didn't take long <i>before</i> the weather brightened up.
<b>Huomaan, että kello on neljä.</b>	I notice <i>that</i> it is four o'clock.
<b>Tiedän, että Pirkko on täällä.</b>	I know <i>that</i> Pirkko is here.
<b>Väitätkö, ettei kello ole neljä?</b>	Are you claiming <i>that</i> it is <i>not</i> four o'clock?
<b>Väitätkö, että kello ei ole neljä?</b>	Are you claiming <i>that</i> it is <i>not</i> four o'clock?
<b>Väitätkö, etten tiedä tätä?</b>	Are you claiming <i>that</i> I <i>don't</i> know this?
<b>Väitätkö, että en tiedä tätä?</b>	Are you claiming <i>that</i> I <i>don't</i> know this?
<b>Kalle on pitkä ja komea.</b>	Kalle is tall <i>and</i> handsome.
<b>Matkustan joko junalla tai autolla.</b>	I travel <i>either</i> by train <i>or</i> by car.
<b>En matkusta autolla enkä junalla.</b>	I travel <i>neither</i> by car <i>nor</i> by train.
<b>Tulen jos voin.</b>	I'll come <i>if</i> I can.
<b>Tulen, joskin saatan myöhästyä hiukan.</b>	I'll come, <i>although</i> I might be a bit late.
<b>Hölkään jotta kunto paranisi.</b>	I go jogging <i>in order to</i> get into better condition.
<b>En tule, koska olen sairastunut.</b>	I'm not coming, <i>because</i> I have fallen ill.
<b>Tulen, kun olen terve.</b>	I'll come <i>when</i> I'm healthy.
<b>Odotan, kunnes hän tulee.</b>	I will wait <i>until</i> he/she comes.
<b>Kuten olen sanonut monta kertaa...</b>	As I have said many times...
<b>Mikäli Yrjö tulee, lähden kotiin.</b>	<i>If</i> Yrjö comes I'm going home.
<b>Teuvo on pitempi kuin minä.</b>	Teuvo is taller <i>than</i> me.
<b>Teuvo on pitkä mutta laiha.</b>	Teuvo is tall <i>but</i> thin.

<b>Mutta</b> sinähän sanoit, että...	<i>But</i> you did say that...
<b>Tulen, mutten</b> viivy kauan.	I'll come, <i>but</i> I won't stay long.
<b>Jos et tule, niin</b> rupean itkemään.	<i>If</i> you don't come, <i>then</i> ('so') I shall start crying.
<b>Niin Karjalainen kuin Virolainen/kin</b> pyrkivät presidentiksi.	<i>Both</i> Karjalainen <i>and</i> Virolainen are seeking to become president.
<b>Viren on sekä nopea että</b> kestävä.	Viren is <i>not only</i> fast <i>but also</i> has stamina.
<b>Tulen, sillä</b> en halua olla yksin kotona.	I'll come, <i>because</i> I don't want to be alone at home.
<b>Otan</b> viiniä <i>tai</i> olutta.	I'll take wine <i>or</i> beer.
<b>Otatko</b> viiniä <i>vai</i> olutta?	Will you take wine <i>or</i> beer?
<b>Otamme joko</b> viiniä <i>tai</i> vichyä.	We'll take <i>either</i> wine <i>or</i> Vichy water.
<b>Tulen, vaikka</b> olen sairas.	I'll come, <i>although</i> I am ill.
<b>En tule, vaan</b> jään kotiin.	I'm not coming, ( <i>but</i> ) I'll stay at home.

## §91 PARTICLES

There are five common enclitic particles appended after all other types of endings: **-ko ~ -kö**, **-kin**, **-kaan ~ -kään**, **-han ~ -hän** and **-pa ~ -pä**. Less common ones are **-ka ~ -kä** and **-s**. As has been said above, enclitic particles always occur last in the word, see the diagrams in sections 12–14.

The ending **-ko ~ -kö** is used to form direct questions (§30.1).

<b>Tule/t/ko?</b>	Are you <i>coming</i> ?
<b>Et/kö tule?</b>	<i>Aren't</i> you coming?
<b>Auto/lla/ko tulet?</b>	Are you coming <i>by car</i> ?
<b>Kemi/in/kö menet?</b>	Are you going <i>to Kemi</i> ?
<b>Sa/isi/n/ko sipulipihvin?</b>	<i>Could I</i> have steak and onions?
<b>Muutta/isi/t/ko Ruotsiin jos voisit?</b>	<i>Would you</i> move to Sweden if you could?
<b>Men/nä/än/kö ulos?</b>	<i>Shall we</i> go out?
<b>Sinä/kö sen teit?</b>	Was <i>it you</i> who did it?
<b>Jo/ko olet korjannut autosi?</b>	Have you repaired your car <i>already</i> ?

The particle **-kin** indicates stress and is often equivalent to 'also' or 'too'. The following examples illustrate its use with nouns:

<b>Olen hankkinut auto/n/kin.</b>	I have got <i>a car, too</i> .
<b>Minä/kin olen hankkinut auton.</b>	<i>I, too</i> , have got a car.
<b>Oli hauskaa, että sinä/kin tulit.</b>	It was nice that <i>you</i> came <i>too</i> .
<b>Juotko kahvi/a/kin?</b>	Do you drink <i>coffee as well</i> ?
<b>Olen ollut Espanja/ssa/kin.</b>	I have been <i>to Spain, too</i> .

The particle **-kin** is also used with verbs, and then it is difficult to say precisely what meaning it has. It may for instance indicate that some expectation has been fulfilled, or mark a sense of surprise, or strengthen an exclamation.

<b>Odotin häntä ja hän tul/i/kin.</b>	I waited for him and he <i>really did</i> come.
<b>Olen ollut ui/ma/ssa/kin.</b>	I've been <i>swimming, too</i> .
<b>Eikö hän ole/kin ihana!</b>	<i>Isn't</i> he wonderful!
<b>Kalle on/kin täällä.</b>	Kalle <i>is in fact</i> here.
<b>Etkö lupaa/kin apuasi!</b>	<i>Surely</i> you will <i>promise</i> your help, <i>won't</i> you?
<b>Men/i/n/kin kotiin.</b>	<i>I did</i> go home.

The particle **-kaan ~ -kään** generally corresponds to **-kin** in negative sentences.

<b>En ole hankkinut auto/a/kaan.</b>	I haven't got <i>a car, either</i> .
<b>Minä/kään en ole hankkinut autoa.</b>	<i>Neither</i> have I got a car.
<b>Etkö juo kahvi/a/kaan?</b>	Don't/won't you drink <i>coffee, either?</i>
<b>En ole ollut Espanja/ssa/kaan.</b>	<i>I haven't</i> been to <i>Spain, either</i> .
<b>Odotin häntä, mutta hän ei tul/lut/kaan.</b>	I waited for him but he <i>didn't</i> come.
<b>Kalle ei ole/kaan täällä.</b>	Kalle <i>is not</i> here, <i>after all</i> .
<b>Etkö lupaa/kaan apuasi?</b>	Won't you <i>promise</i> your help <i>after all?</i>

The particle **-han ~ -hän** generally indicates that the sentence expresses something that is familiar or known. It may also be used simply to stress the speaker's message. It can only be added to the first element of the sentence.

<b>Tämä/hän on skandaali!</b>	<i>This really</i> is a scandal!
<b>Ruotsi/han on kuningaskunta.</b>	<i>As we know</i> , Sweden is a monarchy.
<b>Minä/hän RAKASTAN sinua!</b>	I LOVE you!
<b>Rakasta/n/han minä sinua.</b>	<i>Of course</i> I love you.
<b>Sinu/a/han minä rakastan.</b>	<i>You are the one</i> I love.
<b>Huomenna/han lähdemme lomalle.</b>	<i>Tomorrow</i> we're going on holiday, <i>aren't</i> we?
<b>Viime sunnuntai/na/han Kalle syntyi.</b>	<i>It was last Sunday that</i> Kalle was born.
<b>Ole/n/han minä käynyt Venäjälläkin.</b>	<i>Of course</i> , I've been to Russia as well.

The particle **-han ~ -hän** is also used in questions to make them more polite, and to soften commands.



<b><i>On/ko/han Pentti kotona?</i></b>	<i>I wonder if Pentti is at home?</i>
<b><i>Paljon/ko/han pieni kahvi maksaa?</i></b>	<i>How much might a small coffee cost?</i>
<b><i>Sa/isi/n/ko/han laskun?</i></b>	<i>Could I have the bill, please?</i>
<b><i>Ota/han vähän lisää!</i></b>	<i>Please take a little more!</i>
<b><i>Astu/kaa/han sisään!</i></b>	<i>Please come in!</i>
<b><i>Ole/han hiljaa!</i></b>	<i>Please be quiet, will you?</i>
<b><i>Vie/hän astiat keittiöön!</i></b>	<i>Take the dishes into the kitchen, could you?</i>

The particle **-pa ~ -pä** indicates emphasis. In the spoken language it is often followed by **-s**.

<b><i>On/pa hän pitkä!</i></b>	<i>He really is tall!</i>
<b><i>Kyllä/pä sinä olet ahkera!</i></b>	<i>You ARE hard-working, aren't you?</i>
<b><i>Anna/pa minullekin vähän kahvia!</i></b>	<i>Give me a little coffee too!</i>
<b><i>En/pä anna!</i></b>	<i>No I won't ('give')!</i>
<b><i>On/pa(s) täällä kuuma!</i></b>	<i>It really is hot here!</i>
<b><i>Tuo/ssa/pa on iso joukko!</i></b>	<i>There's a really big group!</i>

The ending **-ka ~ -kä** is fairly rare. It is mainly used with the negation verb to indicate emphasis.

**En tiedä en/kä halua tietää.**

*I don't know, and I don't want to know either.*

**Mormonit eivät käytä kahvia eivät/kä myöskään alkoholia.**

*The Mormons don't drink coffee, nor alcohol either.*

**Älä heitä paperia älä/kä sylje lattialle.**

*Don't throw paper about and don't spit on the floor.*

More than one particle may occasionally be attached to the same word.

<b><i>On/ko/han Sylvi kotona?</i></b>	<i>I wonder if Sylvi is at home?</i>
<b><i>On/pa/han täällä kuuma!</i></b>	<i>It really is hot here, isn't it!</i>
<b><i>Tule/pa/han vähän lähemmäs!</i></b>	<i>Come a bit closer, will you?</i>
<b><i>Olutta/kin/ko vielä otat?</i></b>	<i>Will you really have some more beer, too?</i>
<b><i>Mene/pä/s vähän sivummalle!</i></b>	<i>Move over a bit, will you?</i>

## 21 WORD FORMATION

- *General*
- *Derivation*
- *Compounding*

### §92 GENERAL

There are two ways of forming new words from existing words and stems: derivation and compounding. In derivation, new words (word stems) are made by adding derivative endings or suffixes to the root or to another stem. To the adjective **kaunis** : **kaunii-** ‘beautiful’, for instance, we can add the ending **-ta** to form the derived verb stem **kaunis/ta-** ‘beautify’ (first infinitive **kaunis/ta/a**). In the same way we can take the verb stem **aja-** ‘drive’, and add the ending **-o** to form the derived noun **aj/o** ‘drive, chase, hunt’, or the ending **-ele-** to form the verb stem **aj/ele-** ‘drive around’ (first infinitive **aj/el/la**).

Derivative suffixes occur immediately after the root but before the inflectional endings, i.e. before number and case endings in nominals, before passive, tense, mood and personal endings in finite verb forms, and before the infinitive and participle endings in non-finite verb forms. (See the diagrams in Chapter 3.)

Derived nominals and verbs inflect just like non-derived ones. Derived words are subject to the same sound alternations as other words, in particular consonant gradation (§15) and the vowel changes (§16).

Adding derivative suffixes may cause sound alternations in the root: e.g. **kaunij- : kaune/us** and **aja- : aj/ele-**. In what follows these alternations will be evident from the examples, and separate rules will not be given. There may also be alternations in the derivative suffixes themselves when further suffixes are added.

It is characteristic of Finnish that a given word form may contain many derivative suffixes, one after the other. Below are some examples. The (non-derived) root is given on the left, the derived word in the middle, and the ‘basic’ or full forms of the derivative suffixes on the right.

<i>Stem</i>	<i>Derived word</i>		<i>Derivative suffixes (basic forms)</i>
<b>aja-</b>	<b>aj/ele/minen</b>	driving about	<b>ele-minen</b>
<b>asee-</b>	<b>asee/llis/ta-</b>	arm (verb)	<b>llinen-ta</b>
<b>asee-</b>	<b>asee/llis/ta/minen</b>	arming (noun)	<b>llinen-ta-minen</b>
<b>aja-</b>	<b>aj/ele/hti-</b>	drift	<b>ele-hti</b>
<b>aja-</b>	<b>aj/ele/hti/va</b>	drifting (adj.)	<b>ele-hti-va</b>
<b>lika-</b>	<b>lika/is/uus</b>	dirtiness	<b>inen-uus</b>
<b>koti-</b>	<b>kodi/ttom/uus</b>	homelessness	<b>ton(ttoma)-uus</b>
<b>kuole-</b>	<b>kuole/ma/ttom/uus</b>	immortality	<b>ma-ton(ttoma)-uus</b>
<b>etsi-</b>	<b>etsi/skel/y</b>	search (noun)	<b>skele-y</b>
<b>haukkaa-</b>	<b>hauka/hd/us</b>	yelp (noun)	<b>hta-us</b>
<b>haukkaa-</b>	<b>hauka/ht/el/u</b>	yelping (noun)	<b>hta-ele-u</b>
<b>asu-</b>	<b>asu/nno/ttom/uus</b>	without a house	<b>nto-ton(ttoma)-uus</b>
<b>tu-</b>	<b>tu/tta/ma/ttom/uus</b>	unproductiveness	<b>tta-ma-ton(ttoma)-uus</b>

Not all derivative suffixes are equally productive. Some are extremely productive, which means they can be added to practically all roots that belong to a given type. Examples are the suffixes **-ja** ~ **-jä** ‘agent’, **-minen** ‘verbal noun’ and **-ma/ton** ~ **-mä/tön** ‘not’, cf. **aja/ja** ‘driver’, **aja/minen** ‘driving’, **aja/ma/ton** ‘undriven’; **tuli/ja** ‘comer’, **tule/minen** ‘coming’, **tule/ma/ton** ‘not coming, not come’; **meni/jä** ‘goer’, **mene/minen** ‘going’, **mene/mä/tön** ‘not going, not gone’, etc.

Other suffixes occur primarily or exclusively with certain roots, and are thus more or less unproductive.

## §93 DERIVATION

### §93.1 NOMINAL SUFFIXES

Part A of this section deals with denominal suffixes forming new nominals, and Part B deals with deverbial suffixes forming new nominals.

#### PART A

<i>Root (nom.)</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-hko</b> ~ <b>-hkö</b> (adjective, indicates ‘somewhat’)			
<b>kylmä</b>	cold	<b>kylmä</b>	rather cold
<b>kova</b>	hard	<b>kovahko</b>	fairly hard
<b>pieni</b>	small	<b>pienehkö</b> (§18.3)	rather small
<b>iloinen</b>	glad	<b>iloisehko</b> (§20.1)	fairly glad

<i>Root (nom.)</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-inen</b> (adjective)			
<b>aika</b>	time	<b>aikainen</b>	early
<b>hiki</b>	sweat	<b>hikinen</b>	sweaty
<b>jää</b>	ice	<b>jäinen</b>	icy
<b>lika</b>	dirt	<b>likainen</b>	dirty
<b>luu</b>	bone	<b>luinen</b>	of bone
<b>puu</b>	wood	<b>puinen</b>	wooden
<b>-isa ~ -isä</b> (adjective)			
<b>kala</b>	fish	<b>kalaisa</b>	abounding in fish
<b>leikki</b>	play	<b>leikkisä</b>	playful
<b>raivo</b>	fury	<b>raivoisa</b>	furious
<b>-kko ~ -kkö</b> (collective noun)			
<b>aalto</b>	wave	<b>aallokko</b>	the waves, swell
<b>koivu</b>	birch	<b>koivikko</b>	birch grove
<b>kuusi</b>	spruce	<b>kuusikko</b>	spruce grove
<b>pensas</b>	bush	<b>pensaikko</b>	thicket, shrubbery
<b>-la ~ -lä</b> (noun, indicates location)			
<b>kahvi</b>	coffee	<b>kahvila</b>	café
<b>kylpy</b>	bath	<b>kylpylä</b>	baths
<b>neuvo</b>	advice	<b>neuvola</b>	child health centre
<b>pappi</b>	clergyman, vicar	<b>pappila</b>	vicarage
<b>ravinto</b>	food	<b>ravintola</b>	restaurant
<b>sairas</b>	ill	<b>sairaala</b>	hospital
<b>-lainen ~ -läinen</b> (noun, or noun and adjective, indicates a person)			
<b>apu</b>	help	<b>apulainen</b>	assistant
<b>pako</b>	flight	<b>pakolainen</b>	refugee
<b>koulu</b>	school	<b>koululainen</b>	school pupil
<b>kansa</b>	people	<b>kansalainen</b>	citizen
<b>suku</b>	family	<b>sukulainen</b>	relative
<b>työ</b>	work	<b>työläinen</b>	worker
<b>kaupunki</b>	town	<b>kaupunkilainen</b>	town-dweller
<b>Turku</b>	Turku	<b>turkulainen</b>	resident of Turku
<b>Helsinki</b>	Helsinki	<b>helsinkiläinen</b>	resident of Helsinki
<b>Ruotsi</b>	Sweden	<b>ruotsalainen</b>	Swede, Swedish
<b>Suomi</b>	Finland	<b>suomalainen</b>	Finn, Finnish
<b>Saksa</b>	Germany	<b>saksalainen</b>	German
<b>Norja</b>	Norway	<b>norjalainen</b>	Norwegian

<i>Root (nom.)</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-lainen ~ -läinen (adjective)</b>			
<b>eri</b>	separate	<b>erilainen</b>	different
<b>kaikki</b>	all, everything	<b>kaikenlainen</b>	all kinds of
<b>tuolla</b>	that	<b>tuollainen</b>	that kind of
<b>tämä</b>	this	<b>tällainen</b>	this kind of
<b>heikko</b>	weak	<b>heikonlainen</b>	rather weak
<b>suuri</b>	great	<b>suurenlainen</b>	rather great
<b>-llinen (adjective)</b>			
<b>ase</b>	weapon	<b>aseellinen</b>	armed
<b>hetki</b>	moment	<b>hetkellinen</b>	momentary
<b>yö</b>	night	<b>yöllinen</b>	nocturnal
<b>onni</b>	happiness	<b>onnellinen</b>	happy
<b>perhe</b>	family	<b>perheellinen</b>	with a family
<b>isä</b>	father	<b>isällinen</b>	fatherly
<b>kieli</b>	language	<b>kielellinen</b>	linguistic
<b>kunta</b>	commune, local council	<b>kunnallinen</b>	municipal, communal
<b>nainen</b>	woman	<b>naisellinen</b>	womanly, feminine
<b>-mainen ~ -mäinen (adjective)</b>			
<b>poika</b>	boy	<b>poikamainen</b>	boyish
<b>tyttö</b>	girl	<b>tyttömäinen</b>	girlish
<b>ukko</b>	old man	<b>ukkomainen</b>	senile
<b>sika</b>	pig	<b>sikamainen</b>	swinish, beastly
<b>-nainen ~ -näinen (adjective)</b>			
<b>koko</b>	whole	<b>kokonainen</b>	whole, total
<b>eri</b>	separate	<b>erinäinen</b>	particular, certain
<b>itse</b>	self	<b>itsenäinen</b>	independent
<b>moni</b>	many	<b>moninainen</b>	various
<b>-nen (diminutive noun)</b>			
<b>kala</b>	fish	<b>kalanen</b>	little fish
<b>kirja</b>	book	<b>kirjanen</b>	booklet
<b>poika</b>	boy	<b>poikanen</b>	little boy, offspring
<b>kukka</b>	flower	<b>kukkanen</b>	little flower

<i>Root (nom.)</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-sto ~ -stö</b> (collective noun)			
<b>lähe-</b>	near	<b>lähistö</b>	neighbourhood
<b>saari</b>	island	<b>saaristo</b>	archipelago
<b>enempi</b>	more	<b>enemmistö</b>	majority
<b>vähempi</b>	less	<b>vähemmistö</b>	minority
<b>elin</b>	organ	<b>elimistö</b>	organism
<b>kasvi</b>	plant	<b>kasvisto</b>	flora
<b>maa</b>	earth, country, land	<b>maasto</b>	terrain
<b>laiva</b>	ship	<b>laivasto</b>	fleet
<b>-tar ~ -tär</b> (feminine noun)			
<b>kuningas</b>	king	<b>kuningatar</b>	queen
<b>Pariisi</b>	Paris	<b>pariisitar</b>	Parisian woman
<b>laulaja</b>	singer	<b>laulajatar</b>	female singer
<b>myyjä</b>	salesman	<b>myyjätär</b>	saleswoman
<b>-ton ~ -tön</b> (adjective, indicating 'without')			
<b>koti</b>	home	<b>koditon</b>	homeless
<b>nimi</b>	name	<b>nimetön</b>	nameless
<b>onni</b>	happiness	<b>onneton</b>	unhappy
<b>työ</b>	work	<b>työtön</b>	unemployed
<b>lapsi</b>	child	<b>lapseton</b>	childless
<b>tunne</b>	feeling	<b>tunteeton</b>	unfeeling
<b>-(u)us ~ -(y)ys</b> (abstract noun)			
<b>heikko</b>	weak	<b>heikkous</b>	weakness
<b>vahva</b>	strong	<b>vahvuus</b>	strength
<b>terve</b>	healthy	<b>terveys</b>	health
<b>suuri</b>	great	<b>suuruus</b>	greatness
<b>korkea</b>	high	<b>korkeus</b>	height
<b>kaunis</b>	beautiful	<b>kauneus</b>	beauty
<b>isä</b>	father	<b>isyys</b>	fatherhood, paternity
<b>nuori</b>	young	<b>nuoruus</b>	youth
<b>ystävä</b>	friend	<b>ystävyy</b>	friendship
<b>yksinäinen</b>	lonely	<b>yksinäisyys</b>	loneliness
<b>syytön</b>	innocent	<b>syyttömyys</b>	innocence
<b>varovainen</b>	cautious	<b>varovaisuus</b>	caution
<b>lihava</b>	fat	<b>lihavuus</b>	corpulence

**PART B***First infinitive**Derived word***-e** (noun)

<b>loista/a</b>	shine	<b>loiste</b>	lustre
<b>katso/a</b>	look	<b>katse</b>	look
<b>kasta/a</b>	wet, dip	<b>kaste</b>	dew
<b>puhu/a</b>	speak	<b>puhe</b>	speech
<b>sata/a</b>	rain	<b>sade</b>	rain
<b>toivo/a</b>	hope	<b>toive</b>	hope, wish, expectation

**-i** (noun)

<b>syöttä/ä</b>	feed	<b>syötti</b>	bait
<b>kasva/a</b>	grow	<b>kasvi</b>	plant
<b>paista/a</b>	roast	<b>paisti</b>	roast meat
<b>kasvatta/a</b>	bring up, educate	<b>kasvatti</b>	foster child
<b>muista/a</b>	remember	<b>muisti</b>	memory

**-in** (noun, indicates instrument)

<b>avat/a</b>	open	<b>avain</b>	key
<b>puhel/la</b>	talk, chat	<b>puhelin</b>	telephone
<b>soitta/a</b>	play	<b>soitin</b>	(musical) instrument
<b>pakasta/a</b>	freeze	<b>pakastin</b>	freezer

**-ja ~ -jä** (noun, indicates agent)

<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	<b>myyjä</b>	seller
<b>saa/da</b>	get	<b>saaja</b>	receiver
<b>anta/a</b>	give	<b>antaja</b>	giver
<b>kalasta/a</b>	fish	<b>kalastaja</b>	angler
<b>laula/a</b>	sing	<b>laulaja</b>	singer
<b>teh/dä</b>	do	<b>tekijä</b>	doer, maker, author
<b>palvel/la</b>	serve	<b>palvelija</b>	servant
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>olija</b>	one who is
<b>tunte/a</b>	know	<b>tuntija</b>	connoisseur

**-maton ~ -mätön** (negative adjective)

<b>kuol/la</b>	die	<b>kuolematon</b>	immortal
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>olematon</b>	non-existent
<b>asu/a</b>	live	<b>asumaton</b>	uninhabited
<b>koke/a</b>	experience	<b>kokematon</b>	unexperienced
<b>lyö/dä</b>	hit, beat	<b>lyömätön</b>	unbeaten, unbeatable
<b>näh/dä</b>	see	<b>näkemätön</b>	unseeing, unseen

<i>First infinitive</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-nta ~ -ntä</b> (noun)			
<b>hankki/a</b>	get, obtain	<b>hankinta</b>	acquisition
<b>etsi/ä</b>	look for	<b>etsintä</b>	search
<b>kysy/ä</b>	ask	<b>kysyntä</b>	demand
<b>ampu/a</b>	shoot	<b>ammunta</b>	shooting
<b>-nti</b> (noun)			
<b>saa/da</b>	get	<b>saanti</b>	catch
<b>tuoda</b>	bring, import	<b>tuonti</b>	import
<b>vie/dä</b>	take, export	<b>vienti</b>	export
<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	<b>myynti</b>	sale
<b>tupakoi/da</b>	smoke	<b>tupakointi</b>	smoking
<b>-nto ~ -ntö</b> (noun)			
<b>asu/a</b>	live	<b>asunto</b>	residence
<b>käyttä/ä</b>	use	<b>käytäntö</b>	practice
<b>luo/da</b>	create	<b>luonto</b>	nature
<b>-o ~ -ö</b> (noun)			
<b>jaka/a</b>	divide	<b>jako</b>	division
<b>huuta/a</b>	shout	<b>huuto</b>	shout
<b>lenta/ä</b>	fly	<b>lento</b>	flight
<b>levät/ä</b>	rest	<b>lepo</b>	rest
<b>lähte/ä</b>	leave	<b>lähtö</b>	departure
<b>teh/dä</b>	do	<b>teko</b>	a deed, act
<b>pelät/ä</b>	fear	<b>pelko</b>	fear
<b>tietä/ä</b>	know	<b>tieto</b>	knowledge
<b>näh/dä</b>	see	<b>näkö</b>	sight
<b>kuul/la</b>	hear	<b>kuulo</b>	hearing
<b>-os ~ -ös</b> (noun, often indicates result of an action)			
<b>kiittä/ä</b>	thank	<b>kiitos</b>	thanks
<b>osta/a</b>	buy	<b>ostos</b>	purchase
<b>tul/la</b>	come	<b>tulos</b>	result
<b>pettä/ä</b>	deceive	<b>petos</b>	deceit
<b>kääntä/ä</b>	turn; translate	<b>käännös</b>	turn; translation
<b>piirtä/ä</b>	draw	<b>piirros</b>	drawing



<i>First infinitive</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-ri</b> (noun, indicates agent)			
<b>leipo/a</b>	bake	<b>leipuri</b>	baker
<b>aja/a</b>	drive	<b>ajuri</b>	driver, cabby
<b>kulke/a</b>	go, walk	<b>kulkuri</b>	tramp
<b>taiko/a</b>	conjure, use magic	<b>taikuri</b>	conjuror, magician
<b>-u ~ -y</b> (noun)			
<b>alka/a</b>	begin	<b>alku</b>	beginning
<b>iske/ä</b>	strike	<b>isku</b>	blow, stroke
<b>itke/ä</b>	cry	<b>itku</b>	crying
<b>kylpe/ä</b>	bathe	<b>kylpy</b>	bath
<b>maksa/a</b>	pay	<b>maksu</b>	payment
<b>laula/a</b>	sing	<b>laulu</b>	song
<b>käske/ä</b>	command	<b>käsky</b>	command
<b>sur/ra</b>	grieve	<b>suru</b>	sorrow, grief
<b>-us ~ -ys</b> (noun)			
<b>avat/a</b>	open	<b>avaus</b>	opening
<b>hengittä/ä</b>	breathe	<b>hengitys</b>	breathing
<b>kuljetta/a</b>	transport	<b>kuljetus</b>	transportation
<b>metsästä/ä</b>	hunt	<b>metsästys</b>	hunting
<b>kirjoitta/a</b>	write	<b>kirjoitus</b>	writing, article
<b>kalasta/a</b>	fish	<b>kalastus</b>	fishing
<b>puolusta/a</b>	defend	<b>puolustus</b>	defence
<b>-uu</b> (noun)			
<b>palat/a</b>	return	<b>paluu</b>	return
<b>taat/a</b>	guarantee	<b>takuu</b>	guarantee
<b>kerjät/ä</b>	beg	<b>kerjuu</b>	begging
<b>kaivat/a</b>	long for	<b>kaipuu</b>	longing
<b>kehrät/ä</b>	spin	<b>kehruu</b>	spinning
<b>-vainen ~ -väinen</b> (adjective)			
<b>opetta/a</b>	teach, instruct	<b>opettavainen</b>	instructive
<b>tyyty/ä</b>	be satisfied	<b>tyytyväinen</b>	satisfied
<b>kuol/la</b>	die	<b>kuolevainen</b>	mortal
<b>säästä/ä</b>	save	<b>säästäväinen</b>	economical, thrifty
<b>usko/a</b>	believe	<b>uskovainen</b>	religious

## §93.2 VERBAL SUFFIXES

New verbs can be derived from both verbs and nominals. Deverbal verbs are much more common than denominal ones. The abundance of deverbal verbal suffixes is in fact one of the distinguishing features of Finnish, compared to the Indo-European languages.

*First infinitive*

*Derived word*

**-ahta- ~ -ähtä-** (momentary verb)

<b>hauku/a</b>	bark	<b>haukahtaa</b>	give a bark
<b>laula/a</b>	sing	<b>laulahtaa</b>	sing for a moment
<b>horju/a</b>	stagger	<b>horjahtaa</b>	stagger ('once')
<b>istu/a</b>	sit	<b>istahtaa</b>	sit down

**-aise- ~ -äise-** (momentary verb)

<b>kysy/ä</b>	ask	<b>kysäistä</b>	pop a question
<b>niel/lä</b>	swallow	<b>nielaista</b>	gulp down
<b>vetä/ä</b>	pull	<b>vetäistä</b>	give a pull

**-ele- ~ -ile-** (frequentative verb)

<b>aja/a</b>	drive	<b>ajella</b>	drive around
<b>astu/a</b>	step	<b>astella</b>	step, walk around
<b>kysy/ä</b>	ask	<b>kysellä</b>	ask repeatedly
<b>katso/a</b>	look	<b>katsella</b>	look, watch
<b>kalasta/a</b>	fish	<b>kalastella</b>	be fishing
<b>kiistä/ä</b>	deny, contest	<b>kiistellä</b>	dispute, quarrel

**-ksi-** (frequentative verb)

<b>ime/ä</b>	suck	<b>imeksiä</b>	be sucking
<b>kulke/a</b>	go	<b>kuljeksia</b>	stroll
<b>tunke/a</b>	press, shove	<b>tungeksia</b>	be crowding

**-skele-** (frequentative verb)

<b>etsi/ä</b>	look for	<b>etsiskellä</b>	be searching
<b>ime/ä</b>	suck	<b>imeskellä</b>	be sucking
<b>ol/la</b>	be	<b>oleskella</b>	stay, be staying
<b>oppi/a</b>	learn	<b>opiskella</b>	study

**-skentele-** (frequentative verb)

<b>myy/dä</b>	sell	<b>myyskennellä</b>	be selling
<b>käy/dä</b>	go	<b>käyskennellä</b>	stroll about

<i>First infinitive</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>-tta- ~ -ttä-</b> (causative verb)			
<b>teh/dä</b>	do	<b>teettää</b>	have...done
<b>pes/tä</b>	wash	<b>pesettää</b>	have...washed
<b>kasva/a</b>	grow (up)	<b>kasvattaa</b>	grow, bring up
<b>elä/ä</b>	live	<b>elättää</b>	support, provide for
<b>-u- ~ -y-</b> (reflexive verb)			
<b>löytä/ä</b>	find	<b>löytyä</b>	be found
<b>siirtä/ä</b>	move, transfer	<b>siirtyä</b>	move, be transferred
<b>tunte/a</b>	feel, know	<b>tuntua</b>	feel, be felt, seem
<b>vaihta/a</b>	change	<b>vaihtua</b>	change, be changed
<b>tyhjentä/ä</b>	empty	<b>tyhjentyä</b>	empty
<b>rakasta/a</b>	love	<b>rakastua</b>	fall in love
<b>pelasta/a</b>	save	<b>pelastua</b>	be saved
<b>muutta/a</b>	move, change	<b>muuttua</b>	be changed
<b>-utu- ~ -yty-</b> (reflexive verb)			
<b>kerät/ä</b>	collect	<b>keräytyä</b>	collect, be collected
<b>elä/ä</b>	live	<b>eläytyä</b>	enter into the spirit of
<b>vaivat/a</b>	trouble	<b>vaivautua</b>	bother, take the trouble
<b>jättä/ä</b>	leave	<b>jättäytyä</b>	surrender
<b>peri/ä</b>	inherit	<b>periytyä</b>	be inherited
<b>tunke/a</b>	press, shove	<b>tunkeutua</b>	force one's way
<b>-ile-</b> (expresses continuity)			
<b>aika</b>	time	<b>aikailla</b>	delay
<b>pyörä</b>	wheel	<b>pyöräillä</b>	cycle
<b>nyrkki</b>	fist	<b>nyrkkeillä</b>	box
<b>teltta</b>	tent	<b>telttailla</b>	go camping
<b>pallo</b>	ball	<b>palloilla</b>	play ball
<b>-oi- ~ -öi-</b> (expresses continuity)			
<b>tupakka</b>	cigarette	<b>tupakoida</b>	smoke
<b>elämä</b>	life	<b>elämöidä</b>	make a noise
<b>ikävä</b>	longing	<b>ikävöidä</b>	long for, miss
<b>hedelmä</b>	fruit	<b>hedelmöidä</b>	bear fruit
<b>isäntä</b>	master, host	<b>isännöidä</b>	be in charge, act as host
<b>-t-: -ne-</b> (expresses change)			
<b>halpa</b>	cheap	<b>halvet/a</b> <b>halpene-</b>	become cheaper

<i>First infinitive</i>		<i>Derived word</i>	
<b>huono</b>	bad	<b>huonot/a</b>	become worse
<b>lyhyt</b>	short	<b>huonone- lyhet/ä</b>	become shorter
<b>kylmä</b>	cold	<b>lyhene- kylmet/ä</b>	become colder
<b>tumma</b>	dark	<b>kylmene- tumme<del>t</del>a</b>	become darker
		<b>tummene-</b>	
<b>-ta- ~ -tä-</b>			
<b>mitta</b>	measure	<b>mitata</b>	measure
<b>naula</b>	nail	<b>naulata</b>	nail
<b>höylä</b>	plane	<b>höylätä</b>	plane
<b>kuva</b>	picture	<b>kuvata</b>	describe
<b>hauta</b>	grave	<b>haudata</b>	bury
<b>-tta- ~ -ttä-</b>			
<b>koulu</b>	school	<b>kouluttaa</b>	educate, train
<b>lippu</b>	flag	<b>liputtaa</b>	put out flags
<b>vero</b>	tax	<b>verottaa</b>	tax
<b>puukko</b>	sheath knife	<b>puukottaa</b>	stab
<b>-u- ~ -y- (reflexive verb)</b>			
<b>kuiva</b>	dry	<b>kuivua</b>	(become) dry
<b>tippa</b>	drop	<b>tippua</b>	drip
<b>ruoste</b>	rust	<b>ruostua</b>	rust
<b>kosteaa</b>	damp	<b>kostua</b>	get damp

## §94 COMPOUNDING

The most common type of compound word is made up of two non-derived nouns. In the following examples, the = symbol indicates internal word boundaries. Typical compounds are written without spaces.

<b>kirja=kauppa</b>	bookshop
<b>vesi=pullo</b>	water-bottle
<b>pallo=pele</b>	ball game
<b>kirje=kuori</b>	envelope ('letter=cover')
<b>kivi=katu</b>	paved street ('stone=street')
<b>kivi=kausi</b>	stone age
<b>kirves=varsi</b>	axe handle
<b>keittiö=kone</b>	kitchen machine, appliance

The first noun of these compounds is often in the genitive, e.g.:

<b>meren=ranta</b>	seashore (cf. <b>meri</b> 'sea')
<b>kirjan=kansi</b>	book cover (cf. <b>kirja</b> 'book')
<b>auton=ikkuna</b>	car window (cf. <b>auto</b> 'car')
<b>avaimen=reikä</b>	keyhole (cf. <b>avain</b> 'key')

The components of a compound may also be derived words themselves:

<b>kaiv/in=kone</b>	excavator, digging machine
<b>lävist/ys=kone</b>	punching-machine
<b>pes/u=kone</b>	washing-machine
<b>kone=apu/lainen</b>	machine operator
<b>te/o/llis/uus=tuo/ta/nto</b>	industrial ('industry') production

Also fairly common are compounds with more than two elements, such as:

<b>maa=talo/us=tuo/ta/nto</b>	agricultural production
<b>el/o=kuva=te/o/llis/uus</b>	film industry
<b>huone=kalu=tehdas</b>	furniture factory
<b>koti=tarve=myynti</b>	household sale
<b>kauppa=tase=vaja/us</b>	deficit in the balance of trade
<b>täyde/nn/ys=koulu/t/us=kys/el/y</b>	further training inquiry
<b>el/in=keino=tulo=vero=laki</b>	law concerning the taxation of earned income

Structurally rather complex compounds are formed when one of the elements is a deverbal noun and/or a word inflecting in a local case:

<b>työn=saa/nti=mahdollis/uus</b>	chance of finding work
<b>tode/llis/uuden=hahmo/tta/mis=kyky</b>	ability to give shape to reality
<b>oman=voiton=pyy/nti</b>	self-interest
<b>jäsen=hanki/nta=kampanja</b>	campaign to recruit members
<b>nuoteista=laulu=taito</b>	ability to sing at sight
<b>hallituksessa=ol/o=aika</b>	period ('being') in the government
<b>pysä/hty/mis=merkin=ant/o=nappi</b>	button giving the stop signal

Structures of this type are quite common and productive, particularly in the written language; compare also this example:

<b>prahassa=käy/mä/ttöm/yys=kompleksi</b>	complex about not having been to Prague
---	---

Such complex compounds often correspond to complete sentences. There are also many compound adjectives, especially with a derived adjective as the second element:

<b>asian=muka/inen</b>	appropriate
<b>saman=koko/inen</b>	of the same size

<b>ala=ikä/inen</b>	under-age
<b>vapaa=miel/inen</b>	liberal-minded
<b>lyhyt=sana/inen</b>	taciturn, curt, brief
<b>moni=mutka/inen</b>	complicated
<b>suomen=kiel/inen</b>	Finnish-speaking
<b>kansan=taju/inen</b>	popular, easily comprehensible
<b>kansain=väli/nen</b>	international
<b>pitkä=aika/inen</b>	long, long-term

The first element of a two-part compound may occasionally differ from the basic form. This is particularly the case with nominals ending in **-nen** (§20.1); in compounds these have the same stem as in the partitive singular, for example:

<b>kokonais=valta/inen</b>	holistic (cf. <b>kokonainen</b> ‘whole’)
<b>nais=suku=puoli</b>	female sex (cf. <b>nainen</b> ‘woman’)
<b>yksityis=kohta/inen</b>	detailed (cf. <b>yksityinen</b> ‘individual’)
<b>yleis=kieli</b>	standard language (cf. <b>yleinen</b> ‘general’)
<b>ihmis=kunta</b>	mankind (cf. <b>ihminen</b> ‘man’)
<b>hevos=paimen</b>	horse herder (cf. <b>hevonen</b> ‘horse’)

Other special cases include:

<b>suur=piirteinen</b>	large-scale; broad-minded (cf. <b>suuri</b> ‘great’)
<b>kolmi=vuot/ias</b>	three-year-old (cf. <b>kolme</b> ‘three’)
<b>neli=vuot/ias</b>	four-year-old (cf. <b>neljä</b> ‘four’)

There are not many compound verbs in Finnish. Note however:

<b>alle=kirjoittaa</b>	sign
<b>kokoon=panna</b>	put together
<b>laimin=lyödä</b>	neglect
<b>läpi=käydä</b>	go through
<b>yllä=pitää</b>	maintain, keep up
<b>jälleen=vakunttaa</b>	reinsure

## 22 THE COLLOQUIAL SPOKEN LANGUAGE

- *General*
- *Omission and assimilation of sounds*
- *Differences of form*

### §95 GENERAL

This book has so far been primarily concerned with the grammar of standard Finnish, which is predominantly a written form of the language. However, few Finns actually keep strictly to this norm in their speech; it is mostly heard in official, more or less 'solemn' situations in which most Finns rarely, if ever, find themselves (speeches, sermons, radio and TV newsreading, rituals such as the opening of Parliament, often in teaching, etc.).

The norms or rules of this spoken standard language are very close to those of the written language. One often hears the claim that 'Finnish is spoken the same way as it is written'. But this is not literally true. The claim refers to the correspondence between letters and phonemes (§5): one and the same phoneme regularly corresponds to each letter, and vice versa.

In everyday situations not many Finns express themselves in speech exactly as they would in writing. The grammar of colloquial spoken Finnish differs in many ways from that of the written standard and the official spoken form based on this, both in pronunciation and in morphology and syntax.

It is not therefore in any way 'bad Finnish'; it is merely a form of the language used in different situations. In the same way, there have long existed regional dialects which also differ from the (written or spoken) standard language, e.g. the south-western dialects, the Häme dialects, the south-eastern dialects and the northern dialects.

During the past few decades, however, spoken Finnish has been going through a critical transition period caused by rapid changes in society. The most important of these changes have been: the postwar resettlements; changes in the structure of the economy, followed by migration from the countryside and urbanization (particularly the rise of Greater Helsinki); the influence of a uniform, increasingly longer and more thorough education, narrowing not only class differences but also language differences; the nationwide influence of radio and TV; and the linguistically unifying effect of popular light literature.

The birth of Greater Helsinki, the Helsinki-based broadcasting media and the status of the capital city have given rise to a widespread form of free spoken Finnish. Many of the features of this spoken language are nevertheless of older stock, originating e.g. in the western dialects of the province of Uusimaa.

Typical of this colloquial speech are certain omissions and assimilations of sounds (§96) and a number of morphological and syntactic features (§97) which are extremely common, especially in the speech of the younger generation.

## §96 OMISSION AND ASSIMILATION OF SOUNDS

There are several omissions and assimilations which are particularly common in the colloquial spoken language. In the examples that follow, the colloquial spoken language is compared with the 'official' pronunciation of the standard language.

- (1) The final vowels **-i** and **-a**, **-ä** are dropped (and a preceding long consonant is shortened) in certain endings, of which the most important are the inessive case ending **-ssa** ~ **-ssä**, the elative **-sta** ~ **-stä**, the adessive **-lla** ~ **-llä**, the ablative **-lta** ~ **-ltä**, the translative **-ksi**, the second person singular possessive suffix **-si**, the conditional **-isi** and the past tense **-s/i**.

<i>'Official' pronunciation</i>		<i>Colloquial pronunciation</i>
<b>talossa</b>	in the house	<b>talos</b>
<b>meressä</b>	in the sea	<b>meres</b>
<b>talosta</b>	out of the house	<b>talost</b>
<b>merestä</b>	out of the sea	<b>merest</b>
<b>autolla</b>	by car	<b>autol</b>
<b>häneltä</b>	from him	<b>hänelt</b>
<b>vanhaksi</b>	to (become) old	<b>vanhaks</b>
<b>autosi</b>	your car	<b>autos</b>
<b>hän tulisi</b>	he would come	<b>hän tulis</b>
<b>Pekka sanoisi</b>	Pekka would say	<b>Pekka sanois</b>
<b>meillä on</b>	we have	<b>meil on</b>
<b>Tuula heräsi</b>	Tuula woke	<b>Tuula heräs</b>

- (2) The final **-i** of diphthongs (e.g. **ai**, **oi**, **ui**, **äi**) is dropped in unstressed syllables. This also often applies to the **-i** of the past tense and the first vowel of the conditional ending **-isi**.

<b>punainen</b>	red	<b>punanen</b>
<b>sellainen</b>	such	<b>sellanen</b>
<b>semmoinen</b>	such	<b>semmonen</b>
<b>tuommainen</b>	that kind of	<b>t(u)ommonen</b>



<i>'Official' pronunciation</i>		<i>Colloquial pronunciation</i>
<b>Kalle sanoi</b>	Kalle said	<b>Kalle sano</b>
<b>Pertti kantoi</b>	Pertti carried	<b>Pertti kanto</b>
<b>hän kestäisi</b>	he would endure	<b>hän kestäs</b>
<b>Keijo antaisi</b>	Keijo would give	<b>Keijo antas</b>

- (3) When **-a** and **-ä** occur after a vowel they often assimilate to the preceding vowel, producing a long vowel (**ea** and **eä** become **ee**, **oa** becomes **oo**, etc.).

<b>kauhea</b>	terrible	<b>kauhee</b>
<b>nopean</b>	fast (genitive)	<b>nopeen</b>
<b>tärkeä</b>	important	<b>tärkee</b>
<b>kulkea</b>	go	<b>kulkee</b>
<b>en rupea</b>	I do/will not begin	<b>en rupee</b>
<b>väkeä</b>	people (partitive)	<b>väkee</b>
<b>taloa</b>	house (partitive)	<b>taloo</b>
<b>varoa</b>	look out	<b>varoo</b>

- (4) The final **-t** of the past participle **-nut** ~ **-nyt** is dropped, or assimilates to the following consonant.

<b>olen sanonut</b>	I have said	<b>olen sanonu</b>
<b>olen sanonut sen</b>	I have said it	<b>olen sanonus sen</b>
<b>Pekka on tullut</b>	Pekka has come	<b>Pekka on tullu</b>
<b>Pekka on tullut jo</b>	Pekka has already come	<b>Pekka on tulluj jo</b>

- (5) In some words **-d-** is dropped or changes to **-j-**.

<b>meidän</b>	our	<b>meijän</b>
<b>teidän</b>	your	<b>teijän</b>
<b>tehdään</b>	one does	<b>tenään</b>

- (6) **-n-** and **-l-** are occasionally dropped in the verbs **ole-** 'be', **mene-** 'go', **pane-** 'put', **tule-** 'come'.

<b>olen</b>	I am	<b>oon</b>
<b>olemme</b>	we are	<b>oomme</b>
<b>menen</b>	I go	<b>meen</b>
<b>tulet</b>	you (sing.) come	<b>tuut</b>
<b>tulette</b>	you (pl.) come	<b>tuutte</b>

## §97 DIFFERENCES OF FORM

Some differences of form are closely related to the omissions and assimilations mentioned above (§96).

- (1) Many common pronoun forms are shortened in the colloquial spoken language.

<i>'Official' pronunciation</i>		<i>Colloquial pronunciation</i>
<b>minä</b>	I	<b>mä</b>
<b>minun</b>	my	<b>mun</b>
<b>minulla</b>	'at' me	<b>mul(la)</b>
<b>minulle</b>	to me	<b>mulle</b>
<b>sinä</b>	you	<b>sä</b>
<b>sinun</b>	your	<b>sun</b>
<b>sinulla</b>	'at' you	<b>sul(la)</b>
<b>tämä</b>	this	<b>tää</b>
<b>tämän</b>	of this	<b>tän</b>
<b>tu</b>	that	<b>toi</b>
<b>tuon</b>	of that	<b>ton</b>
<b>tuolla</b>	there	<b>tol(la)</b>
<b>nuo</b>	those	<b>noi</b>

- (2) Many numerals become much shorter.

<b>yksi</b>	1	<b>yks</b>
<b>kaksi</b>	2	<b>kaks</b>
<b>viisi</b>	5	<b>viis</b>
<b>kuusi</b>	6	<b>kuus</b>
<b>seitsemän</b>	7	<b>seittemän</b>
<b>kahdeksan</b>	8	<b>kaheksan</b>
<b>yhdeksän</b>	9	<b>yhdeksän</b>
<b>yksitoista</b>	11	<b>ykstoist</b>
<b>viisitoista</b>	15	<b>viistoist</b>
<b>kaksikymmentä</b>	20	<b>kaksky(n)t</b>
<b>kuusikymmentä viisi</b>	65	<b>kuusky(n)tviis</b>
<b>seitsemänkymmentäkahdeksan</b>	78	<b>seiskytkahdeksan</b>

- (3) First and second person possessive suffixes are often dropped, and the corresponding pronouns are shortened (§36).

<b>(minun) kirja/ni</b>	my book	<b>mun kirja</b>
<b>(sinun) kirja/si</b>	your (sing.) book	<b>sun kirja</b>
<b>(meidän) kirja/mme</b>	our book	<b>meijän kirja</b>
<b>(teidän) kirja/nne</b>	your (pl.) book	<b>teijän kirja</b>

- (4) The third person plural ending of finite verbs is not used, being replaced by the third person singular ending (§24). In addition, the pronoun **ne** 'those' often replaces **he** 'they', and similarly in the singular **se** 'it' replaces **hän** 'he, she'.

<b>he tule/vat</b>	they come	<b>ne tulee</b>
--------------------	-----------	-----------------

*'Official' pronunciation***he anta/vat**

they give

**he mene/vät**

they go

*Colloquial pronunciation***ne antaa****ne menee**

- (5) The passive forms (§69–71) are used instead of the first person plural ending **-mme**.

**me sano/mme**

we say

**me sanotaan****me sano/i/mme**

we said

**me sanottiin****me sano/isi/mme**

we would say

**me sanottais(iin)****sano/kaamme**

let us say

**sanotaan****emme sano**

we do not say

**me ei sanota****emme sano/neet**

we did not say

**me ei sanottu****emme sano/isi**

we would not say

**me ei sanottais(i)****me mene/mme**

we go

**me mennään****me men/i/mme**

we went

**me mentiin****me men/isi/mme**

we would go

**me mentäis(iin)****men/käämme**

let us go

**mennään****emme mene**

we do not go

**me ei mennä****emme men/neet**

we did not go

**me ei menty****emme men/isi**

we would not go

**me ei mentäis(i)****emme ol/isi men/neet**we would not have  
gone**me ei oltais menty**

- (6) The interrogative particle **-ko ~ -kö** often takes the form **-ks** (§30.1).

**onko(s) teillä**

do you have?

**onks teill****palaako täällä**

is it burning here?

**palaaks tääl****vienkö minä**

shall I take?

**vienks mä**

- (7) The ending **-ma- ~ -mä-** of the third infinitive illative (§77) is often dropped.

**mennään nukku/ma/an**

let's go to sleep

**mennään nukkuun****lähden tanssi/ma/an**

I'm going dancing

**lähen tanssiin****tuletkos kävele/mä/än**are you coming for  
a walk ('to walk')?**tuuks käveleen**

The case ending **-Vn** then assimilates to the last vowel of the stem, e.g. **nukku/un**.

# APPENDIX: INFLECTION TABLES

## NOMINALS

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	talo	talot	kauppa	kaupat
<i>Gen.</i>	talon	talojen	kaupan	kauppojen
<i>Part.</i>	taloa	taloja	kauppaa	kauppoja
<i>Iness.</i>	talossa	taloissa	kaupassa	kauppoissa
<i>Elat.</i>	talosta	taloista	kaupasta	kauppoista
<i>Illat.</i>	taloon	taloihin	kauppaan	kauppoihin
<i>Adess.</i>	talolla	taloilla	kaupalla	kauppoilla
<i>Ablat.</i>	talolta	taloilta	kaupalta	kauppoilta
<i>Allat.</i>	talolle	taloille	kaupalle	kauppoille
<i>Ess.</i>	talona	taloina	kauppana	kauppoina
<i>Transl.</i>	taloksi	taloiksi	kaupaksi	kauppoiksi
<i>Nom.</i>	tunti	tunnit	käsi	kädet
<i>Gen.</i>	tunnin	tuntien	käden	käsien
<i>Part.</i>	tuntia	tunteja	kättä	käsiä
<i>Iness.</i>	tunnissa	tunneissa	kädessä	käsissä
<i>Elat.</i>	tunnista	tunneista	kädestä	käsistä
<i>Illat.</i>	tuntiin	tunteihin	käteen	käsiin
<i>Adess.</i>	tunnilla	tunneilla	kädellä	käsillä
<i>Ablat.</i>	tunnilta	tunneilta	kädeltä	käsiltä
<i>Allat.</i>	tunnille	tunneille	kädelle	käsille
<i>Ess.</i>	tuntina	tunteina	kätenä	käsinä
<i>Transl.</i>	tunniksi	tunneiksi	kädeksi	käsiksi
<i>Nom.</i>	kieli	kielet	liike	liikkeet
<i>Gen.</i>	kielen	kielten	liikkeen	liikkeiden
<i>Part.</i>	kieltä	kieliä	liikettä	liikkeitä
<i>Iness.</i>	kielessä	kielissä	liikkeessä	liikkeissä
<i>Elat.</i>	kielestä	kielistä	liikkeestä	liikkeistä
<i>Illat.</i>	kieleen	kieliin	liikkeeseen	liikkeisiin
<i>Adess.</i>	kielellä	kielillä	liikkeellä	liikkeillä
<i>Ablat.</i>	kieleltä	kieliltä	liikkeeltä	liikkeiltä
<i>Allat.</i>	kielille	kielille	liikkeelle	liikkeille
<i>Ess.</i>	kielenä	kielinä	liikkeenä	liikkeinä
<i>Transl.</i>	kieleksi	kieliksi	liikkeeksi	liikkeiksi

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	ihminen	ihmiset	ajatus	ajatukset
<i>Gen.</i>	ihmisen	ihmisten	ajatuksen	ajatusten
<i>Part.</i>	ihmistä	ihmisiä	ajatusta	ajatuksia
<i>Iness.</i>	ihmisessä	ihmisissä	ajatuksessa	ajatuksissa
<i>Elat.</i>	ihmisestä	ihmisistä	ajatuksesta	ajatuksista
<i>Illat.</i>	ihmiseen	ihmisiin	ajatukseseen	ajatuksiin
<i>Adess.</i>	ihmisellä	ihmisillä	ajatuksella	ajatuksilla
<i>Ablat.</i>	ihmiseltä	ihmisiltä	ajatukselta	ajatuksilta
<i>Allat.</i>	ihmiselle	ihmisille	ajatukselle	ajatuksille
<i>Ess.</i>	ihmisenä	ihmisinä	ajatuksena	ajatuksina
<i>Transl.</i>	ihmiseksi	ihmisiksi	ajatukseksi	ajatuksiksi
<i>Nom.</i>	taivas	taivaat	rengas	renkaat
<i>Gen.</i>	taivaan	taivaiden	renkaan	renkaiden
<i>Part.</i>	taivasta	taivaita	rengasta	renkaita
<i>Iness.</i>	taivaassa	taivaissa	renkaassa	renkaissa
<i>Elat.</i>	taivaasta	taivaista	renkaasta	renkaista
<i>Illat.</i>	taivaaseen	taivaisiin	renkaaseen	renkaisiin
<i>Adess.</i>	taivaalla	taivailla	renkaalla	renkailla
<i>Ablat.</i>	taivaalta	taivailta	renkaalta	renkailta
<i>Allat.</i>	taivaalle	taivaille	renkaalle	renkaille
<i>Ess.</i>	taivaana	taivaina	renkaana	renkaina
<i>Transl.</i>	taivaaksi	taivaiksi	renkaaksi	renkaiksi
<i>Nom.</i>	hyvyys	hyvydet	avain	avaimet
<i>Gen.</i>	hyvyyden	hyvyyksien	avaimen	avaimien
<i>Part.</i>	hyvyyttä	hyvyyksiä	avainta	avaimia
<i>Iness.</i>	hyvyydessä	hyvyyksissä	avaimessa	avaimissa
<i>Elat.</i>	hyvyydestä	hyvyyksistä	avaimesta	avaimista
<i>Illat.</i>	hyvyyteen	hyvyyksiin	avaimeseen	avaimiin
<i>Adess.</i>	hyvyydellä	hyvyyksillä	avaimella	avaimilla
<i>Ablat.</i>	hyvyydeltä	hyvyyksiltä	avaimelta	avaimilta
<i>Allat.</i>	hyvyydelle	hyvyyksille	avaimelle	avaimille
<i>Ess.</i>	hyvyytenä	hyvyyksinä	avaimena	avaimina
<i>Transl.</i>	hyvyydeksi	hyvyyksiksi	avaimeksi	avaimiksi
<i>Nom.</i>	työtön	työttömät	askel	askelet
<i>Gen.</i>	työttömän	työttömien	askelen	askelien
<i>Part.</i>	työttöntä	työttömiä	askelta	askelia
<i>Iness.</i>	työttömässä	työttömissä	askelessa	askelissa
<i>Elat.</i>	työttömästä	työttömistä	askelesta	askelista
<i>Illat.</i>	työttömään	työttömiin	askeleen	askeliin
<i>Adess.</i>	työttömällä	työttömillä	askelella	askelilla
<i>Ablat.</i>	työttömältä	työttömiltä	askelelta	askelilta

	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>	<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>
<i>Allat.</i>	työttömälle	työttömille	askelelle	askelille
<i>Ess.</i>	työttömänä	työttöminä	askelena	askelina
<i>Transl.</i>	työttömäksi	työttömiksi	askeleksi	askeliksi
<i>Nom.</i>	kolmas	kolmannet	suurempi	suuremmat
<i>Gen.</i>	kolmannen	kolmansien	suuremman	suurempien
<i>Part.</i>	kolmatta	kolmansia	suurempaa	suurempia
<i>Iness.</i>	kolmannessa	kolmansissa	suuremmassa	suuremmissa
<i>Elat.</i>	kolmannesta	kolmansista	suuremmasta	suuremmista
<i>Illat.</i>	kolmanteen	kolmansiin	suurempaan	suurempiin
<i>Adess.</i>	kolmannella	kolmansilla	suuremmalla	suuremmilla
<i>Ablat.</i>	kolmannelta	kolmansilta	suuremmalta	suuremmilta
<i>Allat.</i>	kolmannelle	kolmansille	suuremmalle	suuremmille
<i>Ess.</i>	kolmantena	kolmansina	suurempana	suurempina
<i>Transl.</i>	kolmanneksi	kolmansiksi	suuremmaksi	suuremmiksi
<i>Nom.</i>	suurin	suurimmat		
<i>Gen.</i>	suurimman	suurimpien		
<i>Part.</i>	suurinta	suurimpia		
<i>Iness.</i>	suurimmassa	suurimmissa		
<i>Elat.</i>	suurimmasta	suurimmista		
<i>Illat.</i>	suurimpaan	suurimpiin		
<i>Adess.</i>	suurimmalla	suurimmilla		
<i>Ablat.</i>	suurimmalta	suurimmilta		
<i>Allat.</i>	suurimmalle	suurimmille		
<i>Ess.</i>	suurimpana	suurimpina		
<i>Transl.</i>	suurimmaksi	suurimmiksi		

## VERBS

### SANO/A VERBS

#### FINITE FORMS

##### *Indicative*

	<i>Affirmative</i>	<i>Present active</i>	
		<i>Negative</i>	
<i>Singular</i>			
1	sanon	I say	en sano
2	sanot	you say	et sano
3	sanoo	he/she says	ei sano
			I do not say
			you do not say
			he/she does not say

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<i>Plural</i>			
1	sanomme		emme sano
2	sanotte		ette sano
3	sanovat		eivät sano
<i>Passive</i>			
	sanotaan	one says	ei sanota
<i>Past active</i>			
<i>Singular</i>			
1	sanoin	I said	en sanonut      I did not say
2	sanoit		et sanonut
3	sanoi		ei sanonut
<i>Plural</i>			
1	sanoimme		emme sanoneet
2	sanoitte		ette sanoneet
3	sanoivat		eivät sanoneet
<i>Passive</i>			
	sanottiin		ei sanottu
<i>Perfect active</i>			
<i>Singular</i>			
1	olen sanonut	I have said	en ole sanonut      I have not said
2	olet sanonut		et ole sanonut
3	on sanonut		ei ole sanonut
<i>Plural</i>			
1	olemme sanoneet		emme ole sanoneet
2	olette sanoneet		ette ole sanoneet
3	ovat sanoneet		eivät ole sanoneet
<i>Passive</i>			
	on sanottu		ei ole sanottu
<i>Pluperfect active</i>			
<i>Singular</i>			
1	olin sanonut	I had said	en ollut sanonut      I had not said
2	olit sanonut		et ollut sanonut
3	oli sanonut		ei ollut sanonut
<i>Plural</i>			
1	olimme sanoneet		emme olleet sanoneet
2	olitte sanoneet		ette olleet sanoneet
3	olivat sanoneet		eivät olleet sanoneet

*Affirmative**Passive*

oli sanottu

*Negative*

ei ollut sanottu

**Conditional***Present active**Singular*

1 sanoisin

I would say

en sanoisi

I would not say

2 sanoisit

et sanoisi

3 sanoisi

ei sanoisi

*Plural*

1 sanoisimme

emme sanoisi

2 sanoisitte

ette sanoisi

3 sanoisivat

eivät sanoisi

*Passive*

sanottaisiin

ei sanottaisi

*Perfect active**Singular*

1 olisin sanonut

I would  
have said

en olisi sanonut

I would not  
have said

2 olisit sanonut

et olisi sanonut

3 olisi sanonut

ei olisi sanonut

*Plural*

1 olisimme sanoneet

emme olisi sanoneet

2 olisitte sanoneet

ette olisi sanoneet

3 olisivat sanoneet

eivät olisi sanoneet

*Passive*

olisi sanottu

ei olisi sanottu

**Imperative***Present active**Singular*

2 sano

say

älä sano

do not say

3 sanokoon

älkөөn sanoko

*Plural*

1 sanokaamme

älkäämme sanoko

2 sanokaa

älkää sanoko

3 sanokoot

älkөөt sanoko



*Affirmative*  
*Passive*  
sanottakoon

*Negative*  
älkөөn sanottako

### *Potential*

#### *Present active*

##### *Singular*

1 sanonen	I may say	en sanone	I may not say
2 sanonet		et sanone	
3 sanonee		ei sanone	

##### *Plural*

1 sanonemme		emme sanone	
2 sanonette		ette sanone	
3 sanonevat		eivät sanone	

##### *Passive*

sanottaneen		ei sanottane	
-------------	--	--------------	--

#### *Perfect active*

##### *Singular*

1 lienen sanonut	I may have said	en liene sanonut	I may not have said
2 lienet sanonut		et liene sanonut	
3 lienee sanonut		ei liene sanonut	

##### *Plural*

1 lienemme sanoneet		emme liene sanoneet	
2 lienette sanoneet		ette liene sanoneet	
3 lienevät sanoneet		eivät liene sanoneet	

##### *Passive*

lienee sanottu		ei liene sanottu	
----------------	--	------------------	--

## NON-FINITE FORMS

### *Infinitives*

<i>First inf.</i>	sanoa sanoakseni	to say
-------------------	---------------------	--------

<i>Second inf.</i>	sanoessa sanoen	
--------------------	--------------------	--

<i>Third inf.</i>	sanomaan sanomassa sanomasta sanomalla sanomatta	
-------------------	--	--

*Participles*

		<i>Present</i>	
<i>Active</i>	sanova		saying
<i>Passive</i>	sanottava		that must be said
		<i>Past</i>	
<i>Active</i>	sanonut		said
<i>Passive</i>	sanottu		said

**HYPÄT/Ä VERBS**

## FINITE FORMS

*Indicative*

		<i>Present active</i>	
<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<i>Singular</i>			
1 hyppään	I jump	en hyppää	I do not jump
2 hyppäät		et hyppää	
3 hyppää		ei hyppää	
<i>Plural</i>			
1 hyppäämme		emme hyppää	
2 hyppäätte		ette hyppää	
3 hyppäävät		eivät hyppää	
<i>Passive</i>			
hypätään		ei hypätä	
		<i>Past active</i>	
<i>Singular</i>			
1 hyppäsin	I jumped	en hypännyt	I did not jump
2 hyppäsit		et hypännyt	
3 hypäsi		ei hypännyt	
<i>Plural</i>			
1 hypäsimme		emme hypänneet	
2 hypäsitte		ette hypänneet	
3 hypäsivät		eivät hypänneet	
<i>Passive</i>			
hypättiin		ei hypätty	

*Perfect active**Singular*

1 olen hypännyt	I have jumped	en ole hypännyt	I have not jumped
2 olet hypännyt		et ole hypännyt	
3 on hypännyt		ei ole hypännyt	

*Plural*

1 olemme hypänneet		emme ole hypänneet	
2 olette hypänneet		ette ole hypänneet	
3 ovat hypänneet		eivät ole hypänneet	

*Passive*

on hypätty	ei ole hypätty
------------	----------------

*Pluperfect active**Singular*

1 olin hypännyt	I had jumped	en ollut hypännyt	I had not jumped
2 olit hypännyt		et ollut hypännyt	
3 oli hypännyt		ei ollut hypännyt	

*Plural*

1 olimme hypänneet		emme olleet hypänneet	
2 olitte hypänneet		ette olleet hypänneet	
3 olivat hypänneet		eivät olleet hypänneet	

*Passive*

oli hypätty	ei ollut hypätty
-------------	------------------

*Conditional**Present active**Singular*

1 hyppäisin	I would jump	en hyppäisi	I would not jump
2 hyppäisit		et hyppäisi	
3 hyppäisi		ei hyppäisi	

*Plural*

1 hyppäisimme		emme hyppäisi	
2 hyppäisitte		ette hyppäisi	
3 hyppäisivät		eivät hyppäisi	

*Passive*

hypättäisiin	ei hypättäisi
--------------	---------------

*Perfect active**Singular*

1	olisin hypännyt	I would have jumped	en olisi hypännyt	I would not have jumped
2	olisit hypännyt		et olisi hypännyt	
3	olisi hypännyt		ei olisi hypännyt	

*Plural*

1	olisimme hypänneet		emme olisi hypänneet	
2	olisitte hypänneet		ette olisi hypänneet	
3	olisivat hypänneet		eivät olisi hypänneet	

*Passive*

	olisi hypätty		ei olisi hypätty	
--	---------------	--	------------------	--

*Imperative**Present active**Singular*

2	hyppää	jump	älä hyppää	do not jump
3	hypätköön		älköön hypätkö	

*Plural*

1	hypätkäämme		älkäämme hypätkö	
2	hypätkää		älkää hypätkö	
3	hypätkööt		älkööt hypätkö	

*Passive*

	hypättäköön		älköön hypättäkö	
--	-------------	--	------------------	--

*Potential**Present active**Singular*

1	hypännen	I may jump	en hypänne	I may not jump
2	hypännet		et hypänne	
3	hypännee		ei hypänne	

*Plural*

1	hypänemme		emme hypänne	
2	hypännette		ette hypänne	
3	hypännevät		eivät hypänne	

*Passive*

	hypättäneen		ei hypättäne	
--	-------------	--	--------------	--

*Perfect active**Singular*

1	lienen hypännyt	I may have jumped	en liene hypännyt	I may not have jumped
2	lienet hypännyt		et liene hypännyt	
3	lienee hypännyt		ei liene hypännyt	

*Plural*

1	lienemme hypänneet		emme liene hypänneet	
2	lienette hypänneet		ette liene hypänneet	
3	lienevät hypänneet		eivät liene hypänneet	

*Passive*

lienee hypätty	ei liene hypätty
----------------	------------------

**NON-FINITE FORMS***Infinitives*

<i>First inf.</i>	hypätä hypätäkseni	to jump
<i>Second inf.</i>	hypätessä hypäten	
<i>Third inf.</i>	hyppäämään hyppäämässä hyppäämästä hyppäämällä hyppäämättä	

*Participles*

		<i>Present</i>
<i>Active</i>	hyppäävä	jumping
<i>Passive</i>	hypättävä	
		<i>Past</i>
<i>Active</i>	hypännyt	
<i>Passive</i>	hypätty	

**SAA/DA VERBS**

## FINITE FORMS

*Indicative*

<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Present active</i>		
		<i>Negative</i>		
<i>Singular</i>				
1	saan	I get	en saa	I do not get
2	saat		et saa	
3	saa		ei saa	
<i>Plural</i>				
1	saamme		emme saa	
2	saatte		ette saa	
3	saavat		eivät saa	
<i>Passive</i>				
	saadaan		ei saada	
<i>Past -active</i>				
<i>Singular</i>				
1	sain	I got	en saanut	I did not get
2	sait		et saanut	
3	sai		ei saanut	
<i>Plural</i>				
1	saimme		emme saaneet	
2	saitte		ette saaneet	
3	saivat		eivät saaneet	
<i>Passive</i>				
	saatiin		ei saatu	
<i>Perfect active</i>				
<i>Singular</i>				
1	olen saanut	I have got	en ole saanut	I have not got
2	olet saanut		et ole saanut	
3	on saanut		ei ole saanut	
<i>Plural</i>				
1	olemme saaneet		emme ole saaneet	
2	olette saaneet		ette ole saaneet	
3	ovat saaneet		eivät ole saaneet	
<i>Passive</i>				
	on saatu		ei ole saatu	

*Pluperfect active**Singular*

1	olin saanut	I had got	en ollut saanut	I had not got
2	olit saanut		et ollut saanut	
3	oli saanut		ei ollut saanut	

*Plural*

1	olimme saaneet		emme olleet saaneet	
2	olitte saaneet		ette olleet saaneet	
3	olivat saaneet		eivät olleet saaneet	

*Passive*

oli saatu	ei ollut saatu
-----------	----------------

*Conditional**Present active**Singular*

1	saisin	I would get	en saisi	I would not get
2	saisit		et saisi	
3	saisi		ei saisi	

*Plural*

1	saisimme		emme saisi	
2	saisitte		ette saisi	
3	saisivat		eivät saisi	

*Passive*

saataisiin	ei saataisi
------------	-------------

*Perfect active**Singular*

1	olisin saanut	I would have got	en olisi saanut	I would not have got
2	olisit saanut		et olisi saanut	
3	olisi saanut		ei olisi saanut	

*Plural*

1	olisimme saaneet		emme olisi saaneet	
2	olisitte saaneet		ette olisi saaneet	
3	olisivat saaneet		eivät olisi saaneet	

*Passive*

olisi saatu	ei olisi saatu
-------------	----------------

*Imperative*

		<i>Present active</i>	
<i>Singular</i>			
2	saa	get	älä saa      do not get
3	saakoon		älkөөn saako
<i>Plural</i>			
1	saakaamme		älkөөmme saako
2	saakaa		älkөө saako
3	saakoot		älkөөt saako
<i>Passive</i>			
	saatakoon		älkөөn saatako

*Potential*

		<i>Present active</i>	
<i>Singular</i>			
1	saanen	I may get	en saane      I may not get
2	saanet		et saane
3	saanee		ei saane
<i>Plural</i>			
1	saanemme		emme saane
2	saanette		ette saane
3	saanevat		eivät saane
<i>Passive</i>			
	saataneen		ei saatane

*Perfect active*

<i>Singular</i>			
1	lienen saanut	I may have got	en liene saanut      I may not have got
2	lienet saanut		et liene saanut
3	lienee saanut		ei liene saanut
<i>Plural</i>			
1	lienemme saaneet		emme liene saaneet
2	lienette saaneet		ette liene saaneet
3	lienevät saaneet		eivät liene saaneet
<i>Passive</i>			
	lienee saatu		ei liene saatu



## NON-FINITE FORMS

*Infinitives*

<i>First inf.</i>	saada saadakseni	to get
<i>Second inf.</i>	saadessa saaden	
<i>Third inf.</i>	saamaan saamassa saamasta saamalla saamatta	

*Participles*

		<i>Present</i>
<i>Active</i>	saava	getting
<i>Passive</i>	saanut	
		<i>Past</i>
<i>Active</i>	saatava	
<i>Passive</i>	saatu	

**TARVIT/A VERBS**

## FINITE FORMS

*Indicative*

		<i>Present active</i>	
<i>Affirmative</i>		<i>Negative</i>	
<i>Singular</i>			
1 tarvitsen	I need	en tarvitse	I do not need
2 tarvitset		et tarvitse	
3 tarvitsee		ei tarvitse	
<i>Plural</i>			
1 tarvitsemme		emme tarvitse	
2 tarvitsette		ette tarvitse	
3 tarvitsevat		eivät tarvitse	
<i>Passive</i>			
tarvitaan		ei tarvita	

*Past active**Singular*

1	tarvitsin	I needed	en tarvinnut	I did not need
2	tarvitsit		et tarvinnut	
3	tarvitsi		ei tarvinnut	

*Plural*

1	tarvitsimme		emme tarvinneet	
2	tarvitsitte		ette tarvinneet	
3	tarvitsivat		eivät tarvinneet	

*Passive*

	tarvittiin		ei tarvittu	
--	------------	--	-------------	--

*Perfect active**Singular*

1	olen tarvinnut	I have needed	en ole tarvinnut	I have not needed
2	olet tarvinnut		et ole tarvinnut	
3	on tarvinnut		ei ole tarvinnut	

*Plural*

1	olemme tarvinneet		emme ole tarvinneet	
2	olette tarvinneet		ette ole tarvinneet	
3	ovat tarvinneet		eivät ole tarvinneet	

*Passive*

	on tarvittu		ei ole tarvittu	
--	-------------	--	-----------------	--

*Pluperfect active**Singular*

1	olin tarvinnut	I had needed	en ollut tarvinnut	I had not needed
2	olit tarvinnut		et ollut tarvinnut	
3	oli tarvinnut		ei ollut tarvinnut	

*Plural*

1	olimme tarvinneet		emme olleet tarvinneet	
2	olitte tarvinneet		ette olleet tarvinneet	
3	olivat tarvinneet		eivät olleet tarvinneet	

*Passive*

	oli tarvittu		ei ollut tarvittu	
--	--------------	--	-------------------	--

*Conditional**Present active**Singular*

1	tarvitsisin	I would need	en tarvitsisi	I would not need
2	tarvitsisit		et tarvitsisi	
3	tarvitsisi		ei tarvitsisi	

*Plural*

1	tarvitsisimme		emme tarvitsisi	
2	tarvitsisitte		ette tarvitsisi	
3	tarvitsisivat		eivät tarvitsisi	

*Passive*

tarvittaisiin		ei tarvittaisi	
---------------	--	----------------	--

*Perfect active**Singular*

1	olisin tarvinnut	I would have needed	en olisi tarvinnut	I would not have needed
2	olisit tarvinnut		et olisi tarvinnut	
3	olisi tarvinnut		ei olisi tarvinnut	

*Plural*

1	olisimme tarvinneet		emme olisi tarvinneet	
2	olisitte tarvinneet		ette olisi tarvinneet	
3	olisivat tarvinneet		eivät olisi tarvinneet	

*Passive*

olisi tarvittu		ei olisi tarvittu	
----------------	--	-------------------	--

*Imperative**Present active**Singular*

2	tarvitse	need	älä tarvitse	do not need
3	tarvitkoon		älkөөn tarvitko	

*Plural*

1	tarvitkaamme		älkөөmme tarvitko	
2	tarvitkaa		älkөө tarvitko	
3	tarvitkoot		älkөөt tarvitko	

*Passive*

tarvittakoon		älkөөn tarvittako	
--------------	--	-------------------	--

*Potential**Present active**Singular*

1	tarvinnen	I may need	en tarvinne	I may not need
2	tarvinnet		et tarvinne	
3	tarvinnee		ei tarvinne	

*Plural*

1	tarvinemme		emme tarvinne	
2	tarvinnette		ette tarvinne	
3	tarvinnevat		eivät tarvinne	

*Passive*

	tarvittaneen		ei tarvittane	
--	--------------	--	---------------	--

*Perfect active**Singular*

1	lienen tarvinnut	I may have needed	en liene tarvinnut	I may not have needed
2	lienet tarvinnut		et liene tarvinnut	
3	lienee tarvinnut		ei liene tarvinnut	

*Plural*

1	lienemme tarvinneet		emme liene tarvinneet	
2	lienette tarvinneet		ette liene tarvinneet	
3	lienevät tarvinneet		eivät liene tarvinneet	

*Passive*

	lienee tarvittu		ei liene tarvittu	
--	-----------------	--	-------------------	--

## NON-FINITE FORMS

*Infinitives*

<i>First inf.</i>	tarvita tarvitakseni
<i>Second inf.</i>	tarvitessa tarvitén
<i>Third inf.</i>	tarvitsemaan tarvitsemassa tarvitsemasta tarvitsemalla tarvitsematta

*Participles*

		<i>Present</i>
<i>Active</i>	tarvitseva	needing
<i>Passive</i>	tarvinnut	
		<i>Past</i>
<i>Active</i>	tarvittava	
<i>Passive</i>	tarvittu	

# SUBJECT INDEX

(Numbers refer to sections: §)

abessive 51  
ablative 45  
absolute superlative 86  
accusative 37, 38  
adessive 44  
adjective 12  
adverb 87  
affirmative sentence 29  
agent construction 76, 84  
allative 46  
answer 30  
attribute 31  
auxiliary verb 27

basic form 18–20, 23

cardinal number 52  
case ending 12  
comitative 51  
comparative 85  
complement 25.3, 33.3  
compounding 94  
concord 24, 31  
conditional 65  
conjugation 21–3  
conjunction 90  
consonant 6  
consonant gradation 15

declension 17–20  
demonstrative pronoun  
55

derivation 92, 93  
derivative suffix 92, 93  
derived form 92, 93  
diphthong 8  
divisible noun 25.2

elative 42  
enclitic particle 12–14, 91  
ending 12–14  
essive 49

finite verb form 13

genitive 34, 35

illative 43  
imperative 66  
indefinite pronoun 57  
indicative 64  
inessive 41  
inessive construction 75.1  
infinitive 73–6  
inflection 12–14, 17–20, 21–3  
instructive 51  
interrogative pronoun 56  
intonation 10

main stress 10  
mood 64–7

negative sentence 29  
nominal 12  
nominative 25  
non-divisible noun 25.2  
non-finite verb form 14, 73, 78  
noun 12  
number 12  
numeral 52, 53

object 33.2, 37, 38  
ordinal number 53  
orthography 5

participial construction 82  
participle 78–84  
particle 12–14, 91  
partitive 32, 33  
passive 68–72  
past tense 60  
perfect 61  
person 24  
personal pronoun 54  
phoneme 5, 6

- pluperfect 62
- plural 26
- possessive suffix 36
- postposition 89
- potential 67
- predicate noun 25.3, 33.3
- preposition 88
- present 59
- pronoun 54–8
- pronunciation 5–10
  
- quantity 7
- question 30, 56
  
- relative pronoun 58
- root 12–14
- singular 26
  
- stress 10
- strong grade 15
- subject 25.3, 33.1
- superlative 86
- syllable 9
  
- temporal construction 83
- tense 59–63
- translative 50
  
- verb 13, 14
- vowel 6
- vowel change 16
- vowel combination 8
- vowel harmony 11
  
- weak grade 15